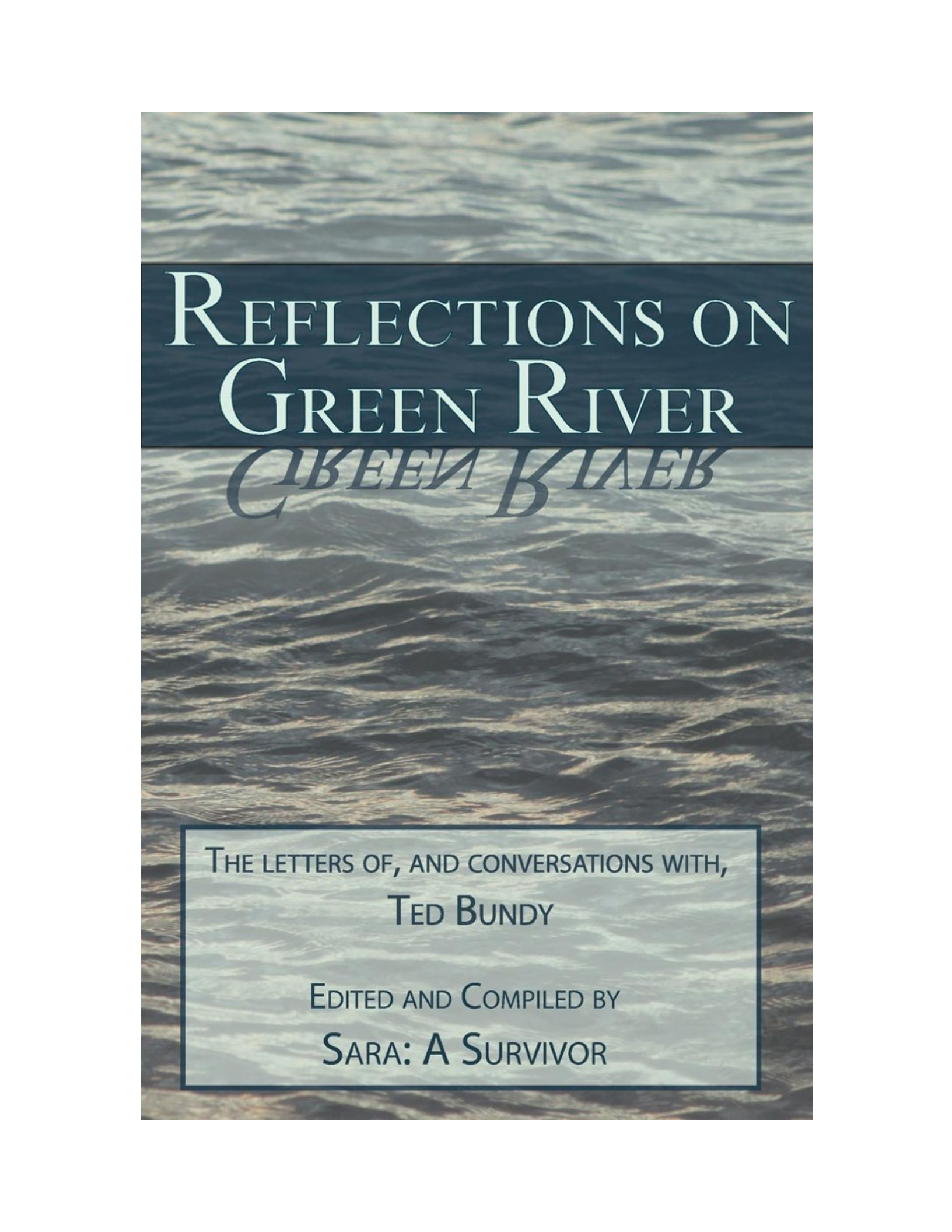
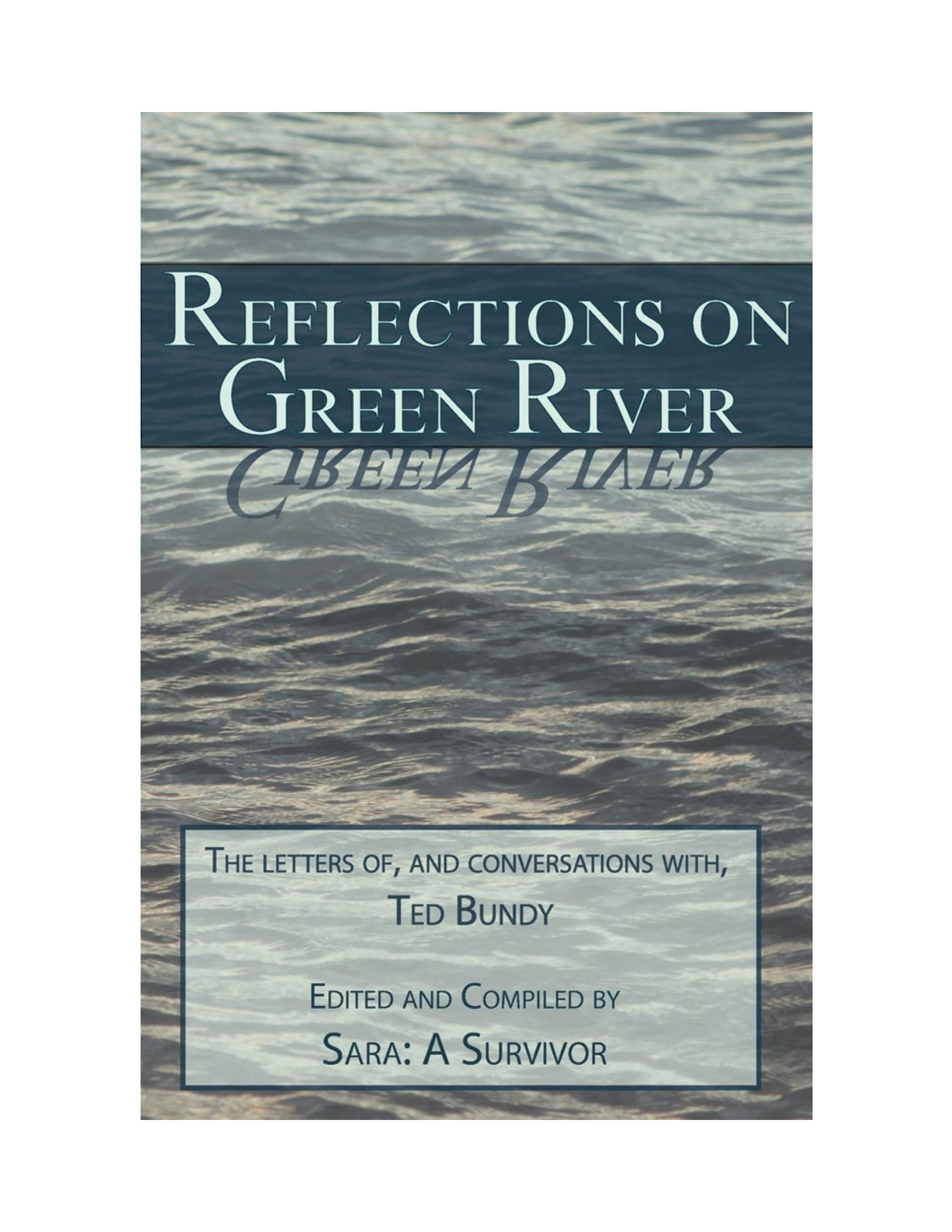




REFLECTIONS ON GREEN RIVER *CIBEEH BIAEB*

THE LETTERS OF, AND CONVERSATIONS WITH,
TED BUNDY

EDITED AND COMPILED BY
SARA: A SURVIVOR



REFLECTIONS ON GREEN RIVER *CIBEEA BIAEB*

THE LETTERS OF, AND CONVERSATIONS WITH,
TED BUNDY

EDITED AND COMPILED BY
SARA: A SURVIVOR

“I saw several sides of Ted over the years that I knew him. There was the stalker, the rapist, the caller, the “friend”, and for a brief period of time the “boyfriend”. These sides evolved and changed during the time I knew him in high school and throughout the first two years of college. It kept me off balance, it kept me confused and frightened, and the concussion damage, psychological stress and trauma kept me unable to process fully the events of that time period. The impact was cumulative and it resulted in permanent damage and amnesia. It would take decades for memories, in fragments, to emerge...and it would take over another decade of crying out to police for help before anyone listened. I didn’t need help to be rescued...I needed help putting the fragments together so I could understand and heal. I needed help verifying the memories so that I could let go of them. I wanted to testify but my mind wasn’t working. I knew deep down something had happened but I couldn’t make the words come out coherently for years. It wasn’t until I had the records released to me that I began to truly heal. There were aspects of my memory fragments that contained specific details never publicly released – they proved I was who I said I was – an early victim of Ted Bundy who survived captivity.

This book refutes some of what was disclosed about Ted Bundy’s communication with investigators behind the scenes. It is being released because there is still much that can be learned from that time period with this new information.”

- Sara: A Survivor

Statement of Citation:

The records contained herein I received as the result of FOIA requests in November of 2014 and in June of 2015. They were provided by the King County Sheriff Office directing me to the Archives and contained a statement that records had been moving over to the archives for the past few years.

The records were released with permission granted to use them in publication from the Archives. They were provided as original audiotapes of the 1984 prison interviews with Ted Bundy by Robert Keppel and Dave Reichert on CD; scanned copies of original letters and writings of Ted Bundy [in his own handwriting which I then typed as entry to this book] and as a transcribed document of the 1988 and 1989 interview with Ted Bundy done by the Sheriff Office.

In keeping with full disclosure and citation, this is where I got them, how I got them, and where I paid for them.

I am grateful they were released to me: as a surviving victim fighting to be heard against previous beliefs, they reveal that at least some of the information released publicly was not positioned in the context of how it was originally given. The evidence as a whole is open to another interpretation and the collective records give me a chance to finally be “heard” and I am hopeful that the public will understand my struggles and what happened back then. The records being released to me gave me back my “voice.” It was one of the most essential elements of my ability to begin to heal.

-Sara

This book is protected by United States Copyright 2015

ISBN: 9780998545608 (e-book)

Grass Butterfly Books

All Rights Reserved.

Table of Contents

Conversations with Ted Bundy: Letters From Prison

[10-2-1984 letter from Starke Prison](#)

[10-01-1984 letter from Starke Prison attachment](#)

[10-15-1984 letter from Starke Prison](#)

[10-19-1984 letter from Starke Prison](#)

[10-27-1984 letter from Starke Prison](#)

[11-18-1984 letter from Starke Prison](#)

[01-15-1985 letter from Starke Prison](#)

[01-15-1985 letter from Starke Prison Outline](#)

[01-29-1985 letter from Starke Prison Continuation](#)

[01-15-1985 letter from Starke Prison Footnotes](#)

[01-28-1985 letter from Starke Prison](#)

[02-03-1985 letter from Starke Prison](#)

[02-03-1985 letter from Starke Prison](#)

[03-21-1985 letter from Starke Prison](#)

[04-17-1985 letter from Starke Prison](#)

[04-25-1985 letter from Starke Prison](#)

[09-05-1985 letter from Starke Prison](#)

[03-04-1986 letter from Starke Prison](#)

[08-03-1986 letter from Starke Prison](#)

[12-23-1986 letter from Starke Prison](#)

[01-17-1987 letter from Starke Prison](#)

[02-16-1987 letter from Starke Prison](#)

[07-06-1987 letter from Starke Prison](#)

[02-11-1988 letter from Starke Prison](#)

Conversations with Ted Bundy: Prison Interviews

[11-17-1984 and 11-18-1984 Ted Bundy: Interview with Dave Reichert & Robert Keppel](#)

[11-17-1984 Tape 1/side A](#)

[11-17-1984 Tape 1/side B](#)

[11-17-1984 Tape 2/side A](#)

[11-17-1984 Tape 2/side B](#)

[11-17-1984 Tape 3/side A](#)

[11-17-1984 Tape 3/side B](#)

[11-17-1984 Tape 4/side A](#)

[11-17-1984 Tape 4/side B](#)

[11-17-1984 Tape 5/side A](#)

[11-17-1984 Tape 5/side B](#)

[11-17-1984 Tape 6/side A](#)

[11-17-1984 Tape 6/side B](#)

[11-17-1984 Tape 7/side A](#)

[11-17-1984 Tape 7/side B](#)

[11-17-1984 Tape 8/side A](#)

[11-17-1984 Tape 8/side B](#)

[**02-22-1988 Ted Bundy: Interview with Robert Keppel**](#)

[**Epilogue**](#)

Ted Bundy Describing His Definition of Serial

Murder:

“Serial murder is another form of behavior. I mean, it’s another form of behavior. And yet it utilizes That behavior is, was spawned and developed and used as the same neurological circuit as any other behavior. I believe. I’m not trying to trivialize it, but I do think people need to see it in the context of what it really is. And there are all sorts of abhorrent behaviors out there. Well, all sorts of normal behaviors. And they all, and cruel and terrible as serial murder is, it is another form, it is acquired just like any other behavior is acquired. Now, I’m not trying to reduce this just to behavioral as terms, but that’s one way of explaining it. It certainly is maintained by a mental component, as it were. It has its origin. But nevertheless, I ...so, if I were to define the whole nature of serial murder, I’d try to bring in those kind of aspects to say that do you want to understand what goes on in the mind of somebody who commits this kind, the kind of behavior we call serial murder. Then, first of all, look at yourself. Look at anything you’ve done repeatedly over the years that has not been good for you or somebody else. Drinking, smoking, shoplifting, stealing flowers, taking too many newspapers from the newspaper stand. Again, not trying to trivialize, but trying to personalize it. Because it’s unique. But every behavior is unique.”

-Ted Bundy

(Florida interview with Robert Keppel, February 1988)

Conversations with Ted Bundy:

Letters from Prison

The following series of letters were obtained from the King County Sheriff Office through Freedom of Information Act requests made in November of 2014 and June of 2015. These requests were made initially to investigate case facts surrounding the murders that occurred in Washington State relative to my own experiences with Ted back in the 1970s. I had been an unrecognized victim of that time period for decades largely due to the underlying severe trauma I suffered. I was also a witness to the abduction of Georgann Hawkins but the extended number of kidnapping incidents, memory distortion and memory loss due to fear and severe trauma, as well as trauma from concussion, prevented me from coming forward in a timely manner. I simply could not remember.

The letters and conversations in this volume in their original form differ from what has been released previously. Where appropriate, I redacted references to person[s] not recognized publicly. Other than that, Ted's statements are provided as they were written or as transcribed from the material provided to me.

The total of these documents refute some of what has been implied or written about these conversations, just as the case files released to me relative to my own experiences refute some of what has been assumed as public knowledge about Ted Bundy cases in the 1970s. There seems to be information relevant to the case that was withheld from public knowledge and thereby influenced public perception about the case in a significant way. Since much has been published over the years that did not include what is noted in these records, it seems fitting that this information also be available to others who are interested in learning of these cases and understanding the broader context of that time period. I also feel that taken in context as a whole, all volumes that I am releasing, may hopefully benefit some people who have been traumatized and whose words and testimony are discounted by those around them simply on the basis of how that information is presented.

Ted's words, as expressed in this volume, describe the Green River Killer, but

they also reveal his intimate understanding of a serial offender and provide insights into his own pathology. The only conversation that I have as a result of the FOIA requests not included in this collection is the final interview in Florida prior to Ted's execution with Robert Keppel. That is being prepared for a third volume due to its length. To have added it in to this volume would have made the book exceptionally long.

The wisdom and knowledge we've gained as a society about such things today differs from what people knew during all that occurred in that time period under the pressures and rapid pace of a real-time series of crimes. Not only from the standpoint of a surviving victim, myself, but also from what the investigators faced in trying to solve multiple crimes in multiple jurisdictions. As Ted stated many times during his conversations with investigators behind the scenes, successful serial killers are successful because they utilize many methods to hide their activity from people they know personally as well as law enforcement. People, to me, seem to want to place blame on others than just the serial offender; "he or she should have known, etc." but it's not in keeping with what happens in all cases, especially in this one.

Serial murder cases need to be revisited after the fact-these cases should not be so readily closed as what happened in this case with public statements put out that no one will ever know. It is true no one may know for certainty, but if serial cases are not reexamined by new eyes, things that were missed on the first go-around may never be caught. Testimony of events that was once viewed as of no value may in retrospect be extremely valuable.

It is only by looking back and attempting to understand how things went wrong can missteps be corrected in the future. It is only by looking back with the wisdom of hindsight can dynamics that were not readily apparent at the time be recognized. The questions that may arise with the release of these volumes should not lessen the inherent value in these volumes for understanding this case and all of its angles and complexities. It is the understanding and knowledge that is most critical to me in releasing them at all.

Bundy letter from Starke, Florida

10-02-1984

Dear [Name Redacted],

Would you please see that the enclosed letter to the Green River Task Force is delivered to someone in that organization who can be trusted to treat it with the utmost in confidentiality?

I ask you not to allow knowledge of the existence of the enclosed letter to go beyond the Task Force and me.

I ask you to forward the enclosed letter because it would be unwise to write the Task Force directly from where I am, and because you are the only person I know and can trust to handle it properly.

Thanks for helping out. Take care of yourself.

Peace,

ted

PS – Please feel free to read the enclosed letter before you give it to the Task Force.

PPS – Please drop me a line, if it is nothing more than a postcard, to let me know that this got out of here and got to you. Thanks.

Bundy letter from Starke, Florida

10-01-1984

Green River Task Force

Burien, Washington

Dear Task Force Members,

I have some information which I think could prove useful in apprehending the person or persons responsible for what are referred to as the Green River murders. Before I provide such information, however, I need your assurances that this letter, as well as any subsequent communications we may have, will be held in the strictest of confidence. I do not want anyone outside your Task Force, especially members of the news media, to become aware of my offer to help and the nature of the help, should you accept it.

My offer of assistance is made sincerely and honestly. I would hope that those sentiments will characterize any relations you have with me.

For many months, like other people in this great part of the country, I have occasionally read and heard about the Green River murders. Coverage here has not been nearly as complete and extensive as it undoubtedly has been in the Pacific Northwest. Coverage here has been on the sensational side, superficial and sporadic.

I did not have any special or exceptional reactions to the news of the Green River cases, beyond what most other people in this part of the country would have, except that by being from the Seattle/Tacoma area my interest was, perhaps, keener than most. And I did not have access to daily media coverage out of Seattle or Tacoma, until recently. The lack of any detailed accounts precluded me from developing any valuable insights into the Green River murders, again, until recently.

What happened recently was that a couple of months ago I began receiving a subscription of the Tacoma News Tribune and a couple of weeks ago I received a copy of the TNT that reported the discovery of the body of a young woman in a remote area of Pierce County. The descriptions of the area and scene, general though they must have been, were far more detailed and evocative than I had read before. It was without any conscious effort on my part that the TNT's accounts of the latest possible Green River murder site aroused some vivid impressions about the behavior of the person or persons responsible for this series of murders, assuming that this latest victim does in fact become firmly linked to the other Green River murders.

I don't know if you want or need any of the information I am able to provide. And it may turn out that you have developed similar impressions, observations and hunches. [After all, you have access to an enormous amount of facts about these crimes that I do not.] But even if I knew you would be interested in what I have to give you, I would have to wait until I received your promise that no one outside the Task Force will be made aware that I have offered to do what I can to assist you.

I am not sure what the best way to go from here is. For instance, if you indicate you are interested in hearing more from me, I would be reluctant to put it in writing and mail it from within the prison because the mail here passes through many hands before the postal authorities get it. [I am apprehensive about mailing this letter even though I have taken the precaution to send it to through [redacted name].] Again, not only don't I want anyone outside the investigation to be aware of me trying to help you, but I feel it could be detrimental to your investigation if my comments related thereto were publicized somehow.

Admittedly, I am being cautious, but I am being so because I know that the name Ted Bundy excites a bit of curiosity especially among news media types.

Another approach is for you to send an investigator to come talk to me. I would talk to such a person but only about the Green River matter. I am playing no games with you. We will handle this thing in a straight forward manner or we don't handle it at all. I think I can make a contribution that will be useful to you in the Green River cases. That is all!

If you decide to come see me, I suggest you work through [redacted name] here in Florida so prison authorities will not get wind of what you are coming to

discuss.

It may be presumptuous of me to believe that you would be at all interested in anything I can provide. Even so, I have let you know that I have something may help you. That's all I can do at this point. The next move is up to you. Please let me know what you would like to do, if anything.

Good luck.

Sincerely,

Ted Bundy

PS – Communicating with me will be a problem for the same reason it is a problem for me to write to you directly. If you write, please don't write on Task Force stationery. Instead, please send word through official legal channels, such as a prosecuting attorney or judge, for example. Make sure the letter is clearly marked "legal mail". This is because legal mail is only opened by prison authorities in my presence and is not read by them.

The alternative would be to relay an initial reply to this letter through [another venue].

Bundy letter from Starke, Florida

10-15-1984

Green River Task Force

King and Pierce County Sheriff's Departments, et al.

Burien, Washington

Dear Task Force members:

On October 1, 1984, I wrote a letter to you and sent it via [redacted name] in Tacoma. I asked [this person] to give me some kind of indication that he had received and forwarded that letter to you. During the intervening two weeks I have heard nothing from [this person], nor you. I don't know what the problem is or even if there is a problem, but I thought I had better try another means of contacting you in case, for whatever reason, the first failed. Therefore I sent this letter through [another person] who I know and trust.

I must admit that I am being cautious in approaching you. It would not look good to my fellow prisoners if it became known that I offered to help in and provide information for your investigation. This is one reason I do not want to let it be known that I am writing you. Mail passes through many hands before it leaves this place and there are too many curious minds for me to address a letter to you directly.

A broader concern of mine is that my offer of information and whatever other assistance you determine I can provide not be made known outside the Task Force, especially not to the news media, in part because of the reason I stated above and in part because such publicity could hamper your investigation in some way.

Okay, with that in mind, I will tell you now, as I told you in my October 1, 1984 letter, that I have information which I believe would be useful to your

investigation. I have a unique perspective on the Green River case, which while I may not provide with anything you haven't thought of before, may cause you to refocus on and re-examine things you may have neglected or dismissed for some reason or other.

Let me explain how I came to realize I had something of value to offer you at this late date.

While I gather that the Green River matter has been a source of concern in the Pacific Northwest for a couple of years or so, news of those murders did not begin to filter down to this far corner of the country until maybe a year ago as far as I recall. Even then news accounts here were infrequent and very brief. I am sure the news coverage here was microscopic compared to what has been seen in the Seattle Tacoma area.

Not having access to regular, detailed, and comprehensive news coverage I did not have an opportunity to gain any kind of feel for the Green River situation. I had no basis for developing any ideas or insights. I had no reason to go out of my way to learn more about the cases. There were other things on my mind.

Then two to three months ago, I began receiving the Tacoma News Tribune [TNT]. It was the first time in over five years I have received a daily newspaper from the Northwest. It was about a month ago that I got my first real taste of local coverage of the Green River investigation when the body of a woman, believed to be linked to the Green River cases was discovered in a remote area of Pierce County. The news coverage of that discovery and subsequent and related articles were something of a revelation. I got a feel for what was happening, albeit tentative and based on pitifully few facts.

But I know your man in a way that facts alone cannot accomplish. I do not know his face, but I have some pretty good ideas on where you can look to see him for yourselves.

There are many reasons why I want to see if I can be of some help to you. I won't claim some noble, civic-minded motivation. Basically, the case has really begun to intrigue me. But I am sure it intrigues lots of people. The difference is I have knowledge and a point of view to add to your case investigation like no one else does. I may simply have reached the point where I realized I have something of value and the chance to use it productively.

I would like your assurance that this letter and any other communications we may have will be kept strictly confidential, and that no one outside the Task Force will be made aware of what I have said here or will say should we enter into a dialogue.

If you wish to communicate with me by mail please do so by sending a letter through a prosecutor, lawyer or judge that is clearly marked "legal mail". Such mail is opened in my presence and not read. Other mail is opened in the mailroom and may be read.

If you would rather send someone to talk with me, I would welcome the opportunity. Eventually, I think you stand to gain more if you meet with me personally. If you do decide to send someone to Florida, I suggest that you have someone from [another venue] help you gain entrance to the prison without divulging the exact reason for your visit.

Well, there you have it. I have no way of knowing if you need or want anything I have to offer. All I can do is let you know I am willing to help any way I can. The rest is up to you.

Good luck.

Sincerely,

Ted Bundy

Bundy letter from Starke, Florida

10-19-1984

To: [name redacted]

Dear [name redacted]:

Thanks for coming to see me yesterday. The hour passed quickly. While our conversation was impromptu and rambled across a variety of subjects, ideas and observations, there is no doubt in my mind that a continuing and systematic dialogue of that kind could prove very beneficial to law enforcement people, and I am referring to a lot more than personality profiles and lists of common characteristics.

However, today I have been giving more thought to the news you relayed to me from the Green River Task Force than I have been to our general discussion. I have had mixed feelings about the news that Detective Keppel may drop by to see me a month or so from now after attending some conference in Atlanta. On the one hand, I can imagine how busy an organization like the Green River Task Force [GRTF] can make itself. There must be priorities. I cannot blame them if they didn't feel I was one of them. Caught up in an investigation like that, there are many things crying for, demanding attention. The value of my offer of information could easily strike them as unclear, even dubious. That I might strongly believe my offer has considerable value is only a matter of opinion at the present time, and time will tell. My offer is at least novel but law enforcement is more often prone to be conventional than novel.

The decision to have Detective Keppel see me in a month could, however, be due less to the busy schedule of the GRTF's investigators and attributable instead to a cynical rejection that I could help them in any way. Let's face it, such cases bring all kinds out of the woodwork and Ted Bundy may be seen as another one of the bugs. I would hope that they'd be more open-minded but I can understand that the pressures of such a case may force them to be otherwise.

I do not, in fact, know that the GRTF has taken this or any kind of an attitude on the basis of my letter to them. I, too, must be careful to keep an open mind. But

the delay of a month certainly doesn't signal an urgent intent. If someone in this part of the country wrote GRTF and said he wanted to confess to some crime or he thought he had seen someone pick up a Green River victim shortly before her death, I wonder if he would be told to expect [a detective] in a month? Of course, I have known such task forces to do far stranger things.

In any event, I hope that if someone from GRTF does come to see me that he or she doesn't do so to patronize me or humor me as a means of getting "a foot in the door" on discussing matters not related directly to the Green River case. That would be a shame and a waste. I know I have the ability to make a significant contribution to that case, even if I have not yet given anyone a reason to believe me.

I would rather not let a month slip by without making any progress on this matter. It's the first time in over nine years that I have attempted to help the police in any meaningful way. The time is right. It is a significant step, whether or not some people are willing to see it that way. So since it appears that it will be a month before anyone gets down here, I would like to use it to prepare for such a meeting.

Remember, we talked some about the use (and possible misuse) of a computer in police investigation. I'll bet the GRTF is paying a pretty penny to computerize different aspects of its investigation. Anyway, the point I'd like to make is that I have a computer and numerous programs uniquely designed to digest facts produced by a Green River type case. What I need now is some data. I've run the few sparse facts I have and come up with some interesting results. The more facts I have, the more numerous and reliable the computed insights.

The kind of discussion we had yesterday was interesting but it doesn't yield the kind of understanding, specific understanding, useful in finding the Green River guy [or guys] for example. The delay in seeing someone from the GRTF could be advantageous, if I can use the time to collect and assimilate some facts in the Green River cases, so that when I do talk to someone, the discussion, the questions and answers, can begin on a level that will be far more applicable useful and practical to the investigation of the case.

My proposal then, is to ask you to get in touch with the GRTF and see if they will, without delay, send you the following types of material:

- 1] A collection of magazine and newspaper articles that accurately and comprehensively track/cover the Green River cases from their beginning to the present;
- 2] A list of the alleged Green River victims which includes the following information for each victim: a] name, b] age, c] general area believe to have disappeared from, d] date of disappearance, e] location where body found, and f] date body found;
- 3] Regional map showing sites where remains/bodies found
- 4] More detailed topographical maps of sites themselves showing back roads, trails and structures, etc., remains
- 5] General descriptions of sites where bodies found, including vegetation, distance to nearest road, and any known legitimate activities in area, if any [i.e. logging, hunting, biking, etc.]
- 6] Photos or photocopies of photos of sites and nearby roads or trails
- 7] And anything else of value they are willing to send.

Now I sure as hell don't want to make it appear that I want to see anything confidential or classified, because I don't want and am not asking for anything of the kind. I know they could not send it anyway. However, if there is something they wouldn't want me to have in my possession but would allow you to bring to the prison and show me in the Colonel office, such would be an alternative. I don't know. It's all up to them.

Would you be willing to have the GRTF send the material I've requested to you, so you could either mail or bring it to me, which ever would be more convenient? Anyway, I'd ask that you call the GRTF as soon as possible to forward my request and get things moving assuming they're receptive to the idea. Also, would you please forward the involved carbon copy of this letter to them? I would appreciate it. Thanks.

Well, that's about it for now. I guess what I am looking for here is a good faith gesture that the GRTF is willing to take me seriously. It would be more than a

gesture, however, since the material they provide me with would serve as the basis for a new and valuable look into what makes the Green River Killer [or Killers] tick and where and how he ticks.

We have an opportunity here. Let's use it.

Thanks for your help. Take care.

Sincerely,

Ted Bundy

CC: Green River Task Force file

PS – When you came to see me Thursday, I was informed of your visit by an officer, standing at the end of the six-man tier I live on and calling out loudly, “Bundy, (law enforcement) callout,” for everyone to hear. I don't need that kind of announcement. That's how unpleasant rumors get started. I know you aren't responsible for how a wing officer calls to me, but you could see that the incident isn't repeated.

The next time you come would you ask [names redacted] or a server you work through at the prison to make sure the wing officer is only informed that I have a callout to the Colonel's office and nothing more. Thank you.

PPS – I thought I should explain briefly my interest in the sites where the ladies have been found. They are undoubtedly the most important source of information about the Green River guy anyone has access to, and I am referring to much more than the bodies themselves and related trace evidence. The sites give an invaluable look into how this man's mind works. It's a place he chose with some care and ha....I should say they are places he chose with some care and he's returned to many times. We know he's been there, obviously, and this fact has an importance that can't be underrated.

Bundy letter from Starke, Florida

10-27-1984

Green River Task Force

Chief Investigator

Criminal Division

Dear Task Force:

This is the continuation of a letter I wrote to you on 10-22-1984. I trust you have received that letter and a copy of a letter I wrote to [name redacted] on October 19, 1984, both of which were forwarded to you. I wanted to start work on this letter earlier this week but several disturbances in the area where I live made it difficult to concentrate. Now with things relatively quiet again, I can take my time and mail this out tomorrow night.

To begin with, I want to make it clear I welcome your questions. If you have any questions concerning my thoughts on the Green River cases generally, or if you have questions about matters I raise in my letters, please don't hesitate to ask and I will do my best to answer them fully. Such questions would be very useful in helping me complete and clarify my thoughts on the things I have written to you about.

When you read these comments of mine please keep in mind that I have no desire or intention of playing detective. I am not and do not want to be a detective. That is not the role I feel capable of playing. All I am is someone with a different point of view of the Green River murders and the person or persons responsible for them. It is a valid and potentially valuable point of view in practical terms of hunting for and catching the person. I realize the real work is up to you. What I ask for is that what I offer to take seriously and that when possible you allow me access to information that will enhance the reliability and effectiveness of the viewpoint I give you.

In my October 22 letter I said that the information I received about the sites where the bodies were discovered aroused in me strong insights into and feeling for what was going on in the mind of the man responsible for placing the bodies in those locations. For several reasons I feel that these sites offer the best opportunity for apprehending the man. Please note again that I use the term “Green River Man” advisedly, and as a kind of short hand. I realize that there is a possibility of more than one person being involved. Obviously, there is much more that this person is doing than disposing of his victims’ bodies. How, where and when the Green River man hunts for, approaches, makes contact, lures and eventually abducts his victims intrigues me, even though I know that this part of the investigation is far more puzzling, complex, speculative, time consuming and less likely to yield the kind of hardcore results that will lead you to your man.

What is more disconcerting is that even if you have some firm answers to how, when and where the Riverman abducts his victims [and he may well have several approaches and variations of approaches depending on the circumstances], those answers could easily leave you a long way from finding and arresting the man himself. But it is definitely a part of the investigation that must be undertaken. Endless lines of inquiries focused on countless leads checked out. If you get lucky, it is called sound police work. If not, it is a wild goose chase. Either way, there’s no doubt that it is the most challenging and demanding way to attempt to solve the case.

So, before I discuss in detail some of my ideas for putting a newly discovered dump/burial site under surveillance, I would like to pose a few of the questions I would seek answers to that I believe, would not only reveal more about how the Riverman selects and takes possession of his victims but would reveal much about the man himself.

Along with the following questions about the victims, circumstances surrounding their disappearances, and related matters, I will provide some commentary on why I think the questions and their answers are pertinent. Many of the questions may strike you as elementary. The commentary, I hope, will prove less so. Again, please keep in mind that I am working with precious few facts.

1. What kind of “scene” were the victims into? I have heard the Green River victims characterized as teenage prostitutes. Is this really true? Was every single one known to have been an active prostitute? Or are there exceptions to that

rule? [I will discuss later why anomalies concerning the type of victim may give valuable insight into the Riverman's method of operation.] Is it possible that some of the girls/victims were called or suspected of being prostitutes because they had "reputations", were party girls, runaways, school dropouts or delinquents; but were not actually prostitutes? What I am wondering is if the victim class may be a bit broader than I have been led to believe.

The Riverman had from the time he started pursuing his victims, a sensitivity to and knowledge of the "scene" [the life style, habits, movements, hangouts and likes and dislikes] of the women he was hunting and eventually killing. How he obtained such knowledge and understanding is anyone's guess but there is a good possibility that he was and is very much a part of that "scene" or the fringes of such a scene. And his knowledge and understanding can only have increased in the past couple years.

Let me get into more about what I mean by the word "scene". First, I am going to assume that the victim class includes more than prostitutes, but also women with backgrounds and lifestyles similar to prostitutes of the kind involved here. If this is an erroneous assumption, please bear with me. By "scene" I mean a cultural milieu that may involve prostitutes, delinquents, runaways, pretty girls, and their friends and peers who hangout, arcades, males, taverns, and discos among other places, and who may also be into drugs and partying and generally being free-spirited and mobile. Please forgive the stereotypes.

My point is that somehow the Riverman came to know his class of victims and their life styles in an intimate way that allows him to manipulate and lure them into his custody. The better one understands that whole "scene" the better one understands how the Riverman works and who he is.

It seems appropriate for me to discuss here some thoughts I have related to what I call the "victim class". From the Riverman's point of view this class could not be better; from law enforcement's, it could not be worse.

As I'm sure you know, the murders of Green River type victims are hard to investigate because 1] their disappearances are usually not reported till days or weeks after they actually disappeared, 2] their movements are often hard to trace, 3] a comprehensive list of their friends and associates is difficult to compile, and 4] in the beginning at least, neither the news media nor the police paid the disappearances much attention. All of these conditions are ideal for the

Riverman who probably wants attention as much as he wants to get caught, which is not at all.

Also working in the Riverman's favor, and one of the reasons he continues to work in the face of an intense investigation is that his victim class continues to provide him with ample candidates. [How many times have you seen a young girl hitch hiking shortly after the well-publicized discovery of another victim?] His victim class is valuable because it seems to be comprised of young women who are in some respects bolder, harder to intimate and control, more mobile than most people as well as being inclined to adopt the "it-can't-happen-to-me" attitude people have about crime.

The Riverman continues to work his territory in part because he is confident of his abilities, he knows the police aren't close, he may not have the time or money to go elsewhere, but most important, he still has ready access to potential victims.

2] What kind of people, especially men, were the victims most often associated with? What kinds of men were their customers? What kinds of men were their friends and boyfriends? What age? How did they dress and wear their hair? Were they into drugs? What kind? What kinds of cars did they drive? What were their socio-economic and educational backgrounds? What kind of music did they like? And much more.

This question is related to the one about the "scene" the victims were into. Part of that "scene" were their male peers, lovers, customers, and friends. If some kind of coherent profile emerges here, it may well also be the profile of the Riverman.

I say this because the Green River victims continue to be vulnerable to this man despite the fact they must know they are targets, potential targets and they have undoubtedly taken some kinds of precautions concerning the kinds of men they will allow to approach them and the kinds of men they will go somewhere with for whatever reason.

The Riverman could theoretically be using many different ways to approach and abduct his victims, and in fact, probably has several he uses. You may very well be surprised by the simplicity of his technique. The kind of thing where you will say, "why didn't we think of that before." For example, he could be playing the

role of cop along the lines of Bianchi and his cousin. He could be stalking and physically carrying off his victims. He could be doing lots of things.

However, my initial sense of what is going on is this: the victims, like the public, are looking for the stereotypical, Henry Lucas type, the grizzled, older, drifter type with the sunken eyeballs and the lewd demeanor. These girls took steps to avoid such people and any other males they considered “strange”. And for a matter of weeks or months, they developed a confidence they had been “successful” in coming up with defenses adequate to the threat of Riverman... Until they met Riverman, who fit none of their preconceptions.

The Green River man doesn't fit the image. He puts the victim at ease. He's one of the crowd, maybe a peer, which is why he is so effective and hard to find. No one remembers him. He doesn't stand out or come on strong in a heavy, intense or threatening manner. I will bet that lots of girls he never abducted were approached by him. He faded into their awareness, felt them out, dangled a lure or two, and casually faded out. Nice guy. Easy-going. Looked like many of the young men they hang out [safely] with every day. Another face in the crowd. Nothing memorable, threatening or unusual.

That is one and only one scenario.

3] Did any of the victims know each other or know of each other? It appeals to me now but could be wrong as hell. And even if it is right on, it doesn't usually get you any closer to your man. Did any of the victims know each other? Since the Riverman is working a relatively small geographic area, the fact that some of the victims may know each other may be coincidental. But he may be focusing in on more than an area or hangout or a “scene” generally. He may have specific victims in mind, in which case some of the following questions occur to me: Did any of the victims carry address books with them when they disappear? Did they have telephones or ready access to telephones where they lived or worked? (The telephone being the perfect way to anonymously facetiously set up a safe rendezvous) And this occurs to me: the Riverman may be interrogating his victims for names of other possible victims and for places where other victims might be found in order to supplement his existing knowledge of the “scene” which he is always looking to expand.

4] Is it possible to determine in the case of any one or more of the victims what the length of time was between the disappearance and the time the body was

dumped or buried? Any clues here could yield some insight into the Riverman's living situation. If several days elapse between the disappearance of any of the victims and the time when their bodies are disposed of, then a strong inference can be made that he lives alone in an apartment that affords some privacy especially for entering and exiting, or a house.

I could go on for many pages like this. I have many questions and reasons for wanting to know the answers. However, I have no idea if any of this interests you at all. So let me finish this up with a couple more questions and move on to the matter of staking out the site where a victim's body has just been discovered.

5] Are there any girls the Riverman has killed who don't fit the mold of his typical victim? If there are such victims, they pose a number of interesting possibilities. Maybe his tastes change occasionally. Maybe he's simply made a mistake and thought one of these exceptional victims was something she wasn't. (nobody's perfect) The Riverman may be looking for a general type, rather than someone who is actually a prostitute. Of course, it is possible that he is hunting for young women who exhibit a certain range of characteristics, within which range are included prostitutes but may also include hitch hikers of a certain type or runaways or bar flies. Anyway, he may be focusing on a kind of place or situation, as well as specific known types (prostitutes) and occasionally a hapless victim strays into a situation or place and she is close enough to his profile to move on her. Should the Riverman be abducting more than prostitutes, then obviously his approaches, his lures, his MO is flexible and not tailored specifically to prostitutes.

It is likely that someday he will expand the kinds of women he is interested in, but for now, he will continue to go with what he knows.

6] How are the disappearances of the victims distributed over time? The questions involved here involve internal and external factors. When and how often he abducts his victims is in part related to his need to do so which may vary. That is an internal type factor. External factors such as demands of family, job or school interact with the internal factors.

Generally speaking, the distribution or the frequency of the disappearances looked at over a long period of time tends to reveal internal drives. Whether the disappearances occurred in the day or nighttime, during weekdays or weekends are factors more likely to reveal work schedules and family responsibilities.

Much can be learned from a close study of questions of when the Riverman abducts his victims which can give insight into his mind and life style.

7] Where have the disappearances occurred? I am not referring to exactly where he encountered his victims, but generally speaking. What little I have tells me he has an amazingly limited geographic range. This may be due to restrictions on his time or money or both. And he obviously doesn't need to range further....yet. What really intrigues me about looking at his territory and seeing where the victims have disappeared from is what it can tell you about his home base. Where is this guy working out of? Where does he live? Given what little I know about this, I have a surprisingly strong impression for the area he is working out of. It is conjecture and it is something more, but we can discuss that once I have had the chance to review more information.

That is all on this for now. I may have already gone on for too long. I hope I haven't bored you. I have many more related questions and comments, but I can give those to you another day. This whole business about when, where and how [you notice I consistently avoid the question of why] he abducts his victims is what I think of as the front end of the process. Basically, it is a massive and complex puzzle to those seeking answer, the pieces to the puzzle. The questions, hypotheses, speculation and lines of investigation of the sites, where the bodies were disposed, are the "back end" of the process - is just the opposite. Here you know, or have a good idea of where, when, how and why in terms of the site: that is why I like to focus on these sites. The sites are much less of a mystery and, not coincidentally, give you the best chance to catch your man red handed.

Staking out a newly discovered site. Let me get right into some of the things I would do to stake out such a site. I have a detailed ten-page outline of how I would go about staking out the site. I don't feel like it would be appropriate here. If you are interested, we can go into it later. For now, I will just list some of the major features I see involved in such a stake out. Quite frankly, I cannot think of any objection to this tactic that cannot be compensated for and overcome.

I know I have belabored this point but I want to emphasize it again, the discovery of such a site offers an enormous opportunity to apprehend the Riverman because if it is a recent victim of his located at the site he will be back and if you handle things right, there is no reason why you cannot be waiting for him when he does.

Okay, now for a few ideas I have about site surveillance:

- 1] Control initial report of newly discovered body. Keep in custody and sequester those who found body. Use landlines. Avoid alerting news media at all cost.
- 2] Have surveillance teams and equipment ready to be rapidly deployed to area. Go first to a location where those who found body can be debriefed. Review detailed maps of area with witnesses. Identify initial surveillance positions.
- 3] Surveillance teams take up tentative positions to monitor traffic in the area only. Begin recording license plate numbers, make, model and colors of all vehicles travelling key roadway near site.
- 4] Surveillance team members are dressed appropriately and are driven to posts in old, beat up four-wheelers, pickups and station wagons. (Note at no time should officer be surveilling area from a vehicle.) Seek camouflaged cover. Leave no vehicles parked in area. Taxi people in and out.
- 5] An initial site survey team, including civilians, who discovered body, should just drive by site. Park a couple miles away. Hike in. Be in constant radio contact with traffic monitors. Task Force members will examine site and body or bodies to make determination if it is a Green River type site. Take photos. Leave as they came in.

If, after some consultation, it is determined to be a Green River site, institute full scale stakeout.

6]. Full scale stakeout of site will take shape depending on the unique demands of site and area and roadways around it. If you show me maps of the areas around site already discovered, I would be happy to show you where I would have placed officers to detect the presence of the Riverman as well as counter any evasive and precautionary tactics he undoubtedly employs when approaching one of his active dump/burial sites. Basically, a full scale surveillance of such a site includes:

a-officers who monitor and record descriptions of vehicles moving through area of site

b-a team that is positioned to observe the site as best as it can be from a distance

c-a high ground position where officers can observe as much of area as possible, including everyone on foot in vicinity

d-24-hour surveillance

e-all positions connected by radio

f-reserve units dispatched to stop any suspicious vehicles or question anyone seen on foot in area (note – anyone stopped by officers in area would be told they were being stopped as part of a search for robbery suspects or some similar justification)

7] Protection of body or bodies and or remains is high priority. The body can be protected from depredation by several means but if it is decided to surreptitiously remove the remains, this can be done too. By the time the Riverman is close enough to see the body and/or remains are gone, you already have him in your sights anyway.

8] As I noted earlier, some means must be used to record the license plate numbers, makes and models of all vehicles passing through area. Of course, special attention must be paid to vehicles that slow down near site, or pass back and forth near it or park anywhere in area. You can follow-up on the vehicle data later to determine if any of the vehicles seemed out of place or were registered to owners who live in the Riverman's hunting territory.

9] Have search and dog teams on call in case your man slips away on foot.

10] Some of the things you can expect from the Riverman as he approaches and reconnoiters the site may include:

a-drive-bys of general area or site

b-parking some distance from the site and hiking in

c-closely examining all activity and vehicles in area before moving in

d-if he has a body, driving as close to the site as he can at a time when there is the least amount of activity in area of site, and,

e-otherwise, he can be expected at any time, probably on foot.

Listen, I have been at this for a couple of days, on and off. It is now Sunday night. I want to get this in the mail tonight. There is much, much more. I could write on the matter of staking out a site, but what I have written should give you a general idea of how I would set it up. I would be happy to answer your questions on this and compare notes with you. We could sit down and go over maps of other sites and set up hypothetical stake outs.

I have some other ideas, too, and they involve:

1. A method of getting the Riverman to come to you,
2. Ways of hunting for his dump/burial sites; and,
3. My own profile of the Riverman.

I'm sending this through [name redacted] in Jacksonville, Florida. I hope this gives you something to think about.

Take care.

Sincerely,

ted

Bundy letter from Starke, Florida

11-18-1984

[Green River Task Force]

Washington State

Dear [Task Force]:

I appreciate you taking the time and coming to talk with me. I hope you found it worthwhile in some way. Your dedication to your work and your knowledge of the cases was impressive. It's not the volume of your knowledge of the cases that struck me, but it was that you knew enough to be asking a lot of vital questions, insightful questions.

You managed to give me a glimpse of the massiveness and complexity of the investigation. I can see how easily people in your position can be overwhelmed by it all. It was a humbling experience in that you showed me what an inflated notion I had of my ability to help you in some meaningful way. I got the feeling that despite the months of being wrapped up in the cases, despite the pressures and frustrations, the reporters and the politicians, you two have managed to maintain a creativeness and openness about the investigation essential to making some sense out of the otherwise bewildering mass of information the Task Force has accumulated.

On the other hand, there is an advantage to not being in the midst of the investigation, burdened and contaminated by all the data, theories, profiles, and organizational limitations that seem like they can confuse and distract as much as they facilitate finding the man who killed the girls in the Green River case. Toward that end, I hope I was in some small way able to give you a new perspective, a fresh view of things here and there.

Let me again urge you to send me any and all questions that you would like me to send you written answers to. It needn't be anything fancy. Go ahead and ask

the same questions you asked while you were down here plus any additional questions that may come to you. My written answers are bound to be somewhat more coherent, concise and thorough than the ones you have on tape, and besides, with time to digest and assimilate the information I obtained in the last couple days, my view of the cases is bound to change and expand.

During our meeting today and immediately after I returned to my cell, I jotted down a number of ideas, topics, and questions I wanted to follow up on in the near future by reducing my thoughts on them to writing and sending them to you. Such topics as 410 dump sites and surveillance, questions to ask prostitutes, my profile of Riverman, computer lists, Pierce County and other possible Pacific Northwest cases which may be related, proactive techniques (i.e. reward, supercop, slasher movie, fresh site surveillance, etc.), and many others that will surely occur to me from time to time.

Regarding the letters I send to you, when I mail a letter to you will you open it personally or will someone else open it? And when you do hear from me by mail, please do drop me a line letting me know it reached you. I remain paranoid about a letter to you falling into the wrong hands.

As I told you, there are a couple letters I wrote in late October (October 23 and October 27) and sent through [name redacted] that have not reached you yet. In light of what I've learned in the past week from the list of victims (on the Special Bulletin) and the map you sent me and from our discussions of the last couple days, I have thrown my meager preconceptions out and started fresh. Therefore, I'm not sure what value my earlier letters will have. Very little, I should think. I suggest you view the letters I wrote to you in October, 1984, as basically uninformed speculation which can serve as a basis against which to view subsequent evolution of ideas on the topics I wrote about.

There's a related matter you asked me about that I don't think I responded to adequately. (It may be only one of many I'm afraid). You asked me when I first learned about the Green River murders and what did I learn about them over the last couple years.

As I said, I first learned about the cases shortly after the discovery of the bodies in the Green River in 1982. A friend of mine in Seattle has been sending me clippings from the Seattle Times for many years. On the back of a clipping she sent me a couple years ago was part of an article about the finds. From time-to-

time over the next year or so I would see bits and pieces of articles but nothing coherent really. Nothing more than a paragraph here and a column there. My friend never sent me a clipping about the murders, in fact, she steadfastly avoided such news and in late 1983 when things intensified she went out of her way to make sure that there were no crime-related articles on the back of clippings she sent me. For all practical purposes, my news about the murders was censored.

I asked for no one to send me any news about the murders and no one sent any. I received no daily papers from the Pacific Northwest until August 1984, when I began to receive the Tacoma News Tribune.

One paper I did receive during this period was The Weekly from Seattle which only ran one article about the murders that I recall and the bulk of that article focused on teenage prostitution, with little I can remember now that involved meaningful facts about the cases.

As I explained in my letter of October 1, 1984, the local Florida media and occasionally the national media would carry a superficial sensational blurb about the murders. I don't know why exactly, but on the basis of that news, I concluded that not only had the Riverman been very active over the past year but all the reports of bodies involved recent murders and whole, fresh bodies. Like most people I assumed too much and knew too little.

The only other noteworthy fact I picked up I picked up off the back of one of my Seattle friends articles a couple years ago and that involved some guy who had become a suspect of some kind and had been giving the cops hell.

The fact is until this week what I knew was of very little value in truly understanding, truly beginning to understand the Riverman and his murders. Then on Tuesday your Special Bulletin and map showed up and yesterday, you arrived.

When you have time, would you please send me the following:

1. Information on related cases in Pierce County
2. The information you showed me in those two Thurston County cases, plus any other related Thurston County cases

3. A road map that shows King and Pierce Counties, or maybe all of Western Washington. It doesn't have to be as detailed as the one you had with you today of King County

I'll wait and see if they can find those newspaper clippings before asking you to send more.

I feel good about our discussion. They laid a foundation for trust and understanding between us. You're not some depersonalized hostile characters. We made contact on a personal level, beyond suspicion and antipathy. Let's build on it and see where it takes us. We're definitely moving in the right direction.

Thanks again for coming. Good luck.

Take care of yourselves.

Peace,

Ted

Bundy letter from Starke, Florida

01-15-1985

Dear [Task Force]:

I've procrastinated and postponed writing to you for too long. Please excuse me. It's about time I got my act together and start to communicate to you as systematically as I can the multitude of thoughts that have occurred to me and which I have written down since our meeting in October, 1984.

As I sit here contemplating putting my thoughts on the Green River case on paper, I find the task as formidable as it is challenging. I sympathize with you. I have only two file folders full of material you've sent me (newspaper clippings, victim lists, etc.) together with a bewildering pile of notes I have jotted down over the past four months. It's hard to decide where to begin and there's always the fear that I'll leave something out or forget something.

I take this seriously. Please understand that. But I've put this off for too long. The only way for me to go now is to start to put words on paper and see where it leads. This isn't going to be very pretty in terms of form. And my handwriting is atrocious. What I'll be doing is focusing on substance, on ideas and to some extent organization. Appearance will have to be ignored. I can only hope you can read this. I apologize for the scribble.

Let me explain briefly what has been going on with me concerning the Green River cases since our meeting. First, in the days and hours immediately following our meeting I paced and thought and paced and ruminated over the information I'd received. I scribbled down page after page of ideas, speculations, and suggestions. Looking at the notes now they appear and read like some Chinese crossword puzzle which I must now decipher as I write to you.

Our discussions were valuable, of course. Of particular value, however, were the newspaper clippings you brought. As you'll recall, the prison authorities misplaced them and I did not receive them until a week later, but I did receive them. While those clippings contained only snippets of useful information, which I am sure is but a drop in the bucket compared to what the Task Force has

amassed, I found some of it revealing, particularly a clipping which was taken from the January 15, 1984 edition of the Seattle Times and was entitled “Deadly mystery: 46 young women missing over 3 years”.

That clipping, together with several lists of unsolved homicides of young women in the Pacific Northwest, significantly altered my perception of how I thought the Riverman selected and abducted his victims. In fact, I’ve decided to devote this letter to discussing my thoughts on how the Green River victims were selected and abducted.

I also received your letters of November 30 and December 14, including the aforementioned lists and a few more clippings. Thank you. In time, I will get around to addressing all the points and questions raised in those letters.

In the weeks following our meeting I drew up a tentative list of topics I wanted to write to you about and it looked something like this:

Riverman’s approaches, ruses, lures

Questions to ask prostitutes

Victims clothing and belongings

Enumclaw sites and area surveillance

Places to search near intersection of 18 & 90

Proactive tactics

Lists of possible suspects for computer

Riverman profile

Significance of Pierce County victims

Summary of thoughts on grave sites and the disposal of victims.

There was no significance to the order of these topics. They are by no means exhaustive. I wrote them down as they occurred to me. I intended to cover them systematically by discussing a couple per letter and waiting for your response.

Now, a couple months later, after my mind has had a chance to slowly digest the information I have received about the Green River cases, I see the list above as somewhat haphazard and incomplete. I see things differently now. A kind of evolution of my understanding of things has taken and is taking place.

In my case, after our meeting, I couldn't bring myself to sit down and start to tackle the long list of ideas that had come to me. It is hard to explain but it had something to do with being overwhelmed by the challenge, wondering if I could really add anything to the investigation, and...well...plain procrastination. I was always going to do it tomorrow.

Around Thanksgiving, I went into a holiday depression period, during which I stopped writing to virtually everyone, and from which I am only beginning to emerge. I'm not soliciting any sympathy here, but the fact is the conditions under which I live make it difficult to be really motivated and foster a kind of emotional roller coaster.

Okay, so here I am. What do I have for you that might possibly aid you in tracking down the Riverman? It's a piece I've prepared separate from this letter and attached to it called "Green River Victims: how many are there and how were they selected and abducted". I hope this doesn't sound pretentious. My purpose is quite serious. I'm simply sharing some of my thoughts on how the women in the Green River case became victims. I don't pretend to have any answers. Only the person or persons responsible can give you those.

Whenever you read anything I write to you about the Green River case I want you to keep in mind the following ground rules that guide me; which help me maintain some kind of perspective in this matter. I've mentioned some of them before, but I'll re-emphasize them again here:

1. I don't for a moment believe that I've thought of anything that hasn't already occurred at some time to someone on the Task Force.
2. I'm not a cop and don't want to be.
3. Who I am is someone with a different point of view and a fairly good

analytical mind who is willing to study the facts and circumstances of the Green River murders toward the end of helping you locate the person or persons responsible for them.

4. While it is necessary to engage in speculation founded on actual facts and circumstances, and speculation which suggests real causes of further investigation that could lead to the identification of the Riverman. (There is a tendency I have noticed in myself to engage in speculation, flights of fancy in the absence of any supporting fact, and I know this to be wasteful and misleading)

5. I have been exposed to only the merest of a shred of the information collected in this case. In one respect this is an advantage because the vast majority of the data accumulated during the investigation is utterly and completely useless and hence, misleading. Of course, that's part of what this kind of problem solving is all about: separating the small portion of useful information from the bulk of misinformation.

6. While I realize that more than one person could be responsible for the deaths of the young women listed as victims in the Green River case, I use the name "Riverman" as a shorthand way of referring to person or persons responsible, to the killer or killers.

7. The purpose of me expressing my thoughts on the case is to help you locate the person who killed those women. But I must keep in mind that this man, and it is almost certainly a man, exists in the here

and now, not in 1982 or 1983. He is not the same man he was one, two or three years ago, none of us are. Neither is he totally different.

The thing is that while, on the one hand, he can be anyone, he isn't. He is a real, living, breathing soul. Generally speaking he thinks like most other people. He looks like and has most of the same problems as so-called normal people. He is unique, in the same way all of us are unique; but he is the same in the sense that his thought processes and his behavior are not outside your or my ability to comprehend, to understand, even to identify with.

The important thing is not to dehumanize him with labels like killer or psychotic, or madman, and to the extent possible, remain free of the official and unofficial stereotypes about how and why he thinks and acts as he does by keeping...an open mind.

Take care,

Best regards,

ted

Bundy letter from Starke, Florida

01-15-1985/Outline

Discussion outline

I. The Riverman's victims: some thoughts on victim lists and how he selects and abducts his victims...1

A. The bigger picture: going beyond the official lists of dead and missing...3

1. Lists of victims...3

a. Not all victims on lists...4

b. Lists inherently incomplete...4

c. Many lists and formats...4

2. Putting lists in perspective...5

a. Victims killed prior to June 1982...5

b. Riverman's victims between July 1982 and December 1983...9

c. Riverman's victims since January 1984...12

3. Green River Victim Lists: suggestions for expanding them to make them more inclusive...20

a. The "B" list criteria...23

1. Female between 15 and 30

2. Found between Vancouver, BC and Portland OR

3. Death caused by asphyxiation

4. Found in outdoor and out-of-the-way, but not necessarily remote, location

B. Where the Riverman looks for his victims...26

C. The type of person he's looking for....28

D. How the Riverman approaches and abducts his victims...31

I. The Riverman's victims: some thoughts on victim lists and how he selects and abducts his victims.

The basic impression I had about the Green River case before I met with you in November of last year was that it involved murders of young prostitutes, who worked and disappeared primarily from the Pacific Highway South (PHS) area of south King County and who began disappearing and dying in July 1982. My guess is that the general public's image of the case is similar and has been shaped by media coverage, even though the news media has reported information that the Green River case involves more.

Now I don't believe that you or other members of the Task Force subscribe to the limited view of the case I've outlined above. However, I do wonder how members of the Task Force view the true dimensions of the case they are working on. I say this because the initial list of victims I received from you (printed on the same page as a map showing the locations where the bodies/remains of the victims were found) contained only 27 names, beginning with Wendy Coffield, who disappeared July 2, 1982, and ending with Mary Sue Bello, who disappeared on October 1, 1983. The map revealed that all of the bodies, except one, were found in King County.

Our meeting began to dispel the limited view of the case I mentioned earlier when you briefly discussed cases where bodies had been found outside King County (the murders of Reames and Anderson, both of whom were last seen in Tacoma, for example) but for one reason or another, these cases have not been formally attributed to the Green River Killer.

But I really got a feel for the larger dimensions of the case when I read about a week after our meeting a January 15, 1984 article from the Seattle Times entitled “Deadly Mystery: 46 young women missing over 3 years”. A couple weeks later you sent me a list of unsolved murders of young women in the Pacific Northwest between 1973 and 1983, which also suggested to me a wider scope with which to consider the Riverman’s activities.¹

My intention now is to dispel and otherwise expand my initial, limited impressions about the scope and nature of the Riverman’s victims.

You will notice that I have used footnotes. I did this because after writing out my thoughts in these matters I found I either overlooked some points, or wished to expand ideas, and footnotes were the most efficient way of doing so.

A. The Bigger Picture: going beyond the official lists of dead and missing.

1. Lists of victims: I have received from you seven lists which contain probable Green River victims, possible Green River victims, or young female murder victims of unsolved homicides not officially linked to the Green River investigation.

Having had a couple months to consider these lists I have the following observations:

a. There are murder victims who should be listed as Green River victims but aren’t. ²

b. The lists are inherently incomplete. By this I mean that despite your best efforts the fact is the Riverman has undoubtedly killed women you either don’t know about or have no reason to believe are connected to the current Green River investigation.

c. The proliferation of lists and a lack of standard format for them promotes confusion and makes it difficult to detect a regional pattern as well as a chronological pattern to the Riverman’s activities. By this I mean, the facts and common sense tell us that the Riverman has not confined his search for victims to Pacific Highway South [PHS] or to downtown Seattle or to King County or even Pierce County. Neither did he wake up on July 1, 1982 and decide for the first time to go out and kill someone.

[Note: it appears as though someone, not Ted, has crossed off all of point Capital A, point 1 a-c above. I say it appears that this is true because even though it is crossed off Ted continues to talk about it as though that information is not missing or as though it is still important. This is evidenced by the fact that his footnote #2 still references that Capital A discussion].

2. Putting the lists in perspective. Believe me, I understand the need to keep your investigation tight and focused. The Task Force can't place the name of every young woman whose murder is unsolved, on the list of Green River victims. You've placed persons on the official list who are most likely victims. At the same time, you must keep in mind, such a list is inherently flawed. The Riverman has killed persons not on that list.

To understand and account for the incompleteness of such lists, let me propose the following categories with which all of the Riverman's victims can be accounted for; albeit generally:

a. Victims killed prior to June, 1982. As I said, the Riverman didn't wake up one morning in early July 1982 and for the first time decide to go out and hunt down and kill one of his young victims. Agisheff and Coffield almost certainly were not his first victims. The number of unsolved homicides of young women in the Seattle/Tacoma area alone during the first six months of 1982 would seem to support this.

Furthermore, the number of murders attributed to the Riverman in July, August, and September, 1982 as well as other periods during the latter part of 1982 and throughout 1983, suggests the kind of drive and proficiency that did not appear overnight.³

The Riverman's victims prior to July 1982 can be accounted for with the following categories:

1. Murder victims whose remains have been found and identified but not listed as Green River victims. Until the Riverman tells you, there's no way to know who his first murder victim was. But even if you only go back to January 1982 there are a number of obvious candidates for this category. Whether you include

or consider them is up to you. In fact, I am sure you have studied all cases during this period carefully. However, I would caution you that just because a young woman murdered during the first six months of 1982 didn't disappear from PHS or downtown Seattle, and just because the victim wasn't a prostitute doesn't mean the Riverman didn't kill her. He is not a robot. He is just as capable of a certain degree of inconsistency and change as anyone else.

Wilcox, Taylor, Conner and Kline are four good candidates for this category, unless you have substantial evidence to rule them out.

2. Victims whose remains have been found but not identified. I have only encountered one case in the first half of 1982 in this category; involving a body found in Clark County in March 1982.

3. Victims simply reported as missing but whose remains have not been found. I admit that this is as nebulous as it is real. Experience has shown that you have not found the remains of at least 15 young women who disappeared after July 1982 and who are officially listed as missing in connection with the Green River case. The fact is that given the Riverman's attempts to hide the bodies of his victims, it is just as likely that he was doing so prior to July 1982 as after.

4. Victims not found nor reported as missing.

a. Experience shows not only that all the Riverman's victims haven't been found, but all have not been reported as missing. Again, this is a nebulous kind of category, but those who fall into it are no less dead. I can hear you saying "So what, what does such analysis add to our ability to find the Riverman?" Please bear with me and consider it in the context of realizing that there is much more involved in the Riverman's history of killings than what happened in south King County after July 1982. In that regard, the same thing can be said for the Riverman's behavior now, today. But let me try to tie all my thoughts on this together before you decide the utility of such an analysis.

b. The Riverman's victims between July 1982 and December 1983. It's safe to say that the official Green River lists cover the vast majority of the Riverman's victims during this period. However, given the nature of this kind of crime, given the way the Riverman has gone about selecting and disposing of his victims, there are bound to be victims not yet linked to the Riverman.

There are three categories covered by the official Green River victim lists:

1. Victims whose remains have been found and who have been identified
2. Victims whose remains have been found but have not been identified
3. Victims who have been listed as missing in connection with the Green River case.

But there are four categories of victims not covered by the official Green River lists. This is not due to neglect or incompetence on the part of the Task Force, but owes mainly to the nature of such crimes, which causes these official lists to be inherently complete.

The four additional categories of victims covering this period are the same as the four I used to apply to the Riverman's victims prior to July 1982.

4. Victims whose remains have been found and identified but are not listed as Green River victims. Among the victims who could fit into this category are Linda Rule [disappeared September 26, 1982] and Kimberly Reames (disappeared June 12, 1983).

5. Victims whose remains have been found but not identified and are not listed as Green River victims. I do not have any information about cases that would fit into this category for the period between July 1982 and December 1983.

6. Victims who have only been reported as missing, whose remains have not been found and who, consequently, have not been linked to the Green River case. While the number of possible victims in this category is probably very small, the possibility exists nonetheless that there are names of persons in missing person files of law enforcement agencies around the Pacific Northwest who strayed into the Riverman's grasp. If they had no record of prostitution and their remains haven't been found, there is no way to connect them to the Green River case. ⁴

7. Victims not found and who have not been reported as missing. Again, there are probably very few in this category, but as I stated earlier, experience has shown that not only haven't all the Riverman's victims been found, a fact which can be deduced from the long list of those officially listed as missing in connection with the Green River case, but not all missing young women have been reported as such.

c. The Riverman's victims since January, 1984. As I said during our meeting, the fact that during 1984 there are no victims listed in connection with the Green River case, who disappeared and whose remains/bodies were found in 1984, is significant to me. I believe the fact represents an important change regarding the Riverman's activity. Is he dead? Is he in poor health? Is he incarcerated? Has he moved out of the region? Or is he simply hiding the bodies of his victims better? These are among the many questions that occur to me as I consider the past 12 months.

It's my opinion that if the Riverman is alive, well and free, he has continued to kill and during 1984 could have killed between 10 and 20 persons if his behavior during 1982 and 1983 is any indicator. That's a big "if". I'm sure you've considered all the possibilities that could account for the apparent decline in murders committed by the Riverman during 1984.

For the purpose of this discussion, I'm going to assume that he is still living in the PNW, that he is free and in good health. The questions are, then, who did he kill during 1984, where did he go looking for them, and what did he do with the bodies? I realize that these are the obvious questions. I guess the point I'm driving at is how has he changed his approach in 1984 to avoid the kind of furor he generated in 1982 and 1983?

Consider this: what if the Riverman hadn't dumped these five bodies in the Green River in July and August 1982? The sensation accompanying the discovery of those bodies made the Green River murders a cause celebre', it gave them an identity, it gave birth to the investigation and ultimately the Task Force. But for those five bodies, I maintain there would have been none of the public outcry, no massive investigation, no Task Force, and little publicity. There would not have been the intense search for bodies and grave sites. All there would have been was an occasional discovery of some unidentified human remains. These discoveries would have been stretched out over a long period of time, causing no undue community concern and warranting only a paragraph or two buried deep inside the daily newspaper. Those remains found would have been less likely to have been identified and the few identified, being prostitutes and/or runaways, are not the kind of murder victims, ordinarily, to cause alarm.

You face the same situation today because of the kind of victims the Riverman preys upon. His victims live in the shadows, constantly on the move. When is a prostitute missing or when has she just moved on? Kids still run away, most

return. Every one of them cannot be treated as a possible murder victim. There are still uncaring, irresponsible family members who don't report their kids missing. The memory of the Green River murders slowly recedes from people's memories. Soon many of the young women plying their trade along PHS or Ponders Corner will remember little if anything about the sensation of the Green River killings. Each day new, young prostitutes and runaways hit the streets.

What I'm saying is that the Riverman's kind of victims remained just as numerous, vulnerable and difficult to trace as ever during 1984. Little has changed, except perhaps the Riverman.

The Riverman must have learned something during 1982 and 1983. Do you suppose one thing he learned was to improve his method of disposing of his victims? With the kind of victim he seeks it's no body, no crime, no attention, no bold headlines about the latest find. Therefore, if the Riverman is alive and well and still living in the Pacific Northwest, the most plausible explanation to me as to why you have not found the bodies of any victims of the Riverman, who are officially recognized as such, in 1984, who also disappeared in 1984, is because he is doing a much better job of disposing of his victim's bodies.⁵

So what the hell does this mean to your investigation? Is there anything to be done to counteract what may be a quieter strategy employed by the Riverman in 1984?

I'll go into my ideas on this in more detail in the section on suggestions, but for now, I'll say one way to attempt to find out what the Riverman is doing is to monitor reports of missing persons in the PNW from Vancouver, BC to Portland as closely as possible.

January 29, 1985

I wrote the preceding 17 pages about two weeks ago, and then put them aside because I felt like I was just rambling on and not adding anything of value to the search for the person or persons responsible for the Green River murders.

Then yesterday I received a letter from [name redacted] dated January 23, 1985, that had enclosed with it a newspaper article about the murder of several young women in the Portland area between 1982 and 1984.⁶ Prior to yesterday I had not been aware of any similar cases in the Portland area. I had known about the death of Trina Hunter, whose name was on one of the lists, but all I knew was that she had been found in north Clark County on December 20, 1982. I had no idea she was last seen in Portland.^{9, 12}

Considering the information about the Green River cases I received as a result of my meeting with Bob Keppel and Dave Reichert in October, 1984, it had often occurred to me that the Portland area was the most logical place for the Riverman to go to hunt for victims in the wake of intense publicity and police investigation that his activities in the Seattle area had caused. Hence, I believed that it was the most logical place to focus the search for him today.

I am aware that this was hardly a brilliant deduction on my part.⁷ Newspaper articles given to me by Bob Keppel during his visit mentioned the close relationship between prostitution in Seattle, Tacoma and Portland, and how many prostitutes in the Seattle/Tacoma area were packing up and heading south to Portland because of the Green River murders. The Riverman was probably reading the same reports I figured. With Portland having a large population of prostitutes and being only a three-hour drive from Seattle, what would you do if you were in the Riverman's shoes?⁸

After reading the article about the Portland murders yesterday, I wrote a letter and explained why I felt a possible link between the Green River and Portland cases should be given far greater weight than the investigators quoted in the article, appeared to give it. The points I raised in my January 28 letter I will raise again during the course of my discussion here.

The news of the Portland cases also helped me see more clearly what I was attempting to get at back on January 15 and I wrote the first 17 pages of my discussion of victim lists, how to gain a better understanding of how many

people the Riverman has actually killed, and where he has gone looking for his victims.

3. Green River Victims Lists: Suggestions for expanding them and making more inclusive. What I am concerned about is far more than lists of names printed on paper. A list of victims of the person who killed the young women involved in the Green River case, no matter how complete and reliable, is not, by itself, going to lead you to that person. Such a list, whether generated manually or by a computer system like the FBI's VICAP (Violent Criminal Apprehension Program), is just another research tool.

However, to a certain extent, a list of victims in a serial murder case like Green River comes to represent where the focus of the investigation is. Currently the official victim list confines itself exclusively to victims whose remains were found in King County since July, 1982. But, as I am sure every investigator connected with the Green River case knows, the Riverman didn't confine his activities to King County any more than I-5 is confined to King County, and he almost certainly killed prior to July 1982.

Compiling a list of possible victims in a serial murder case is one way to chart the activities, albeit imperfectly, of the killer, chronologically and geographically. Ideally, if such a listing is kept up-to-date, it should give investigators some idea of where someone like the Riverman is active currently.

The more limiting, precise and exclusive the criteria used to formulate a list of victims is, the more limited will the investigation tend to be. For example, I understand the reasons why the current Green River list includes only victims found in King County since July 1982. These cases have been determined to have the highest degree of similarity, geographical location of the bodies being one of the factors. But there must be a method for accounting for the inevitable variation that occurred in the way the Riverman went about doing things. There are going to be variations in time, place, condition of the victim's body and other elements of his modus operandi. There is, I believe, a way to expand the list of Green River victims without making it meaningless for the true scope of his activities, especially in the present.

A. A "B" list of Green River victims. I suggest the creation of a second, "B", list of Green River victims.⁹ The "A" list would be composed of the 28 victims whose remains have been found and who are officially listed as Green River

victims, together with the 10-15 officially listed as missing in connection with the case. Because of the degree of similarity of these cases they would be considered as “probable” victims of a common killer. The “B” list would be composed of those who are “possible” victims of the Riverman. The criteria I would use to define a “possible” victim are as follows:

- a. Female between 15 and 30 years old
- b. Found between Vancouver, BC and Portland, OR
- c. death caused by asphyxiation
- d. Found in a outdoor and out-of-the-way location, and
- e. body nude or partially clad.¹³

Several of the murders, mentioned in the newspaper article about cases in Portland, serve as useful examples. It is impossible to say that the Riverman killed one or more of the seven victims referred to in the article. There may in fact be some significant dissimilarities. As Captain Adamson was quoted in the article saying, “they’re different in some ways...some of them are closer than others. At this point they don’t appear to be related but it doesn’t mean they’re not.” This is a reasonable public position to take, but in the privacy of his office, I think another view should prevail.

Due to the proximity of Portland to Seattle and its large population of prostitutes, there is a high probability that the Riverman has killed women he abducted in the Portland area. The age and connection with prostitution of the Portland victims are significant similarities, warranting the inclusion of these victims in the Green River investigation.

The differences, while they cannot be ignored, should be viewed with an awareness that, as I said before, the Riverman is not a robot. He is as prone to change, variation and inconsistency as anyone else. Several of the Portland cases are clearly in the Green River ballpark.¹² It is far better to have an inclusive list of victims than an exclusive list. The danger of an exclusive list, with too few possible victims, is that the investigation defies the reality of how the Riverman actually behaves. In the matter of the Portland cases, for example, it would be unwise not to expand the Green River investigation to Portland and actively search for the Riverman there.¹⁰

B. Where the Riverman looks for his victims.

When I began this discussion I mentioned that one of the misconceptions I initially had about the person or persons responsible for the Green River murders was that he confined his search for victims to an area in south King County around the international airport. That this is not true became obvious for various reasons.¹¹

I have already dealt with the matter of why I believe the Riverman could, would and probably has ranged from Vancouver BC to Portland looking for victims. I will try not to belabor the point. I will just try to summarize by saying there's no reason for him to confine his search for victims to downtown Seattle and Pacific Highway South. In fact, he has every reason to travel around the Pacific Northwest a bit.

Not the least of his reasons for moving around would be to avoid being noticed by spending too much time cruising one area. Of course, he would do this to avoid detection and apprehension by police, especially after the Green River cases gained such notoriety and the police investigation intensified, particularly in 1984.

Time and distance were certainly no great hindrance since within an easy three or four-hour drive of the Seattle area are several centers of prostitute activity, including Ponders Corner in Tacoma and Northeast Union Avenue in Portland. A three-hour drive to Portland, for instance, would be no problem for him. He could easily drive down there after getting off work and be back home in time to get a couple hours sleep before going back to work the following day.

I don't see how there can be any question but that he has searched for victims and found them all over the Northwest. Now there's another issue involved in this discussion of where he looks for his victims. It has to do with the kind of places he drives to, to seek them out. I will go into that in the next section.

C. The kind of victim he's looking for. Another initial impression I had about the Green River murders was that the victims were all prostitutes. There's no question but that the Riverman has been looking for young prostitutes. Of the 23 victims whose bodies have been found, all but a couple have arrest records for prostitution or were reported to be working as prostitutes, and it could be that the couple exceptions may not have been exceptions at all.¹⁶

It doesn't mean, for example, that prostitutes are all the Riverman ever has or ever will look for. Nor should it imply that he picked up all his victims posing as a john while they were soliciting, since from what I have read, several of the dead or missing Green River victims were not believed to be actively soliciting at the time they disappeared.

It is not as clear cut as it seems. What, then, is he looking for in an intended victim.¹⁵ First, she has to be in an appropriate location, one where prostitutes are known to hang out. He seems to favor areas where there is a busy roadway, like an old highway, bordered by cheap, strip city development. He has obviously learned how to scout such an area for victims while remaining very unobtrusive. Third, the intended victim must look, or act, like a prostitute. He has undoubtedly developed a highly refined sense of what a possible victim should look like. How they stand, how they walk, and what they wear are no doubt things he keys on. It's here that he is most likely to select a victim because he thinks she is a prostitute. Or, if he is frustrated or in a hurry, he may pick a girl who is close to what he had in mind.

Fourth, the intended victim must be alone, and there must be no one nearby when he moves on her. The fact that he hasn't abducted two prostitutes at a time nor has there, to my knowledge, been a good, up-close sighting of a Green River victim in the company of a possible suspect just before she disappeared, indicates to me that he is very careful to approach his victims when no one was around.

This doesn't mean they have to be alone when he first sees them. He may, for example, spot a group of girls and take up a position to surreptitiously watch the group until one of them splits off from the others or is left alone, at which time he would move on her. And that is just one of many possible scenarios. Once an intended victim is alone, he makes his approach.

D. How the Riverman approaches and abducts his victims. In his letter to me of December 14, 1984, Bob Keppel wrote, "From your description of the Riverman's behavior, I get the feeling that you believe how the Riverman classifies his victims is not necessarily how we would classify them. Specifically how do you think the victims are selected?"¹¹

The description he was referring to was contained in a letter I wrote to him on October 27, 1984. I wrote that letter two weeks before I met with Bob Keppel

and Dave Reichert. At the time, I had only the cursory knowledge of the Green River case, which included the myths about the case I mentioned at the outset of this discussion.

Since October 27, 1984, I have had a chance to learn more and think more about how the Riverman goes about selecting and abducting his victims. My impressions about his behavior have not changed completely, but they have changed in a few significant respects.

In the preceding section I discussed briefly how I thought the Riverman went about selecting his victims. It is clear that he prefers prostitutes between the ages of 15 and 20 and that he looks for them, logically enough, in areas around the Pacific Northwest where such young women are known to hang out. What is not so clear to me is how he actually makes contact with a victim, induces her to go with him and finally establishes control over her.

I don't pretend to know how he actually approaches and abducts his victims, and no one is likely to until he is caught and tells his story. In my opinion, so very little is known about how he has done this that anything anyone says must be seen for what it is: pure speculation.

During my meeting with Bob Keppel and Dave Reichert, Bob asked me if the way the Riverman has gone about picking up prostitutes shows that the Riverman is a lazy kind of person. I don't believe that that question characterizes Bob's thinking on the subject of how the Riverman abducts his victims, but I did think it was revealing in some respects and offers a good way to get into the subject of *modus operandi*.¹⁷

To begin with, I think it is misleading to assume that the Riverman has exclusively approached his victims passing as a john. While it is a logical assumption that he does and an approach which he has probably used, there are facts which suggest that such a ruse was not used in some cases. As I stated in my October 27, 1984 letter I think the safer assumption is that he has several different approaches he uses depending on the circumstances. What has happened since October 27 is that I have learned things about the facts surrounding the disappearances of some of the Green River victims which suggest approaches I had earlier discounted.

During our discussions last November, Dave, Bob and I did not talk about what

was known about the minutes and hours that immediately preceded the disappearances of the Green River victims. It wasn't until several days after our meeting that I read an article which appeared in the January 15, 1984, edition of the Seattle Times, entitled, "Deadly mystery: 46 young women missing over three years." The article provided brief sketches of each of the 46 women, including in some cases, a few details about what was known about their last moments. These details were invaluable in helping me fill in some of the blanks about how the Riverman might have or might not have made contact with his victims.

I am relying here on that article's accuracy, as far as it goes. If any information in it is incorrect, I ask that I be sent the correct facts regarding the last movements of the Green River victims.

So what facts stand out in my mind about the victims and their last known whereabouts and movements?

1. Three of the 46, according to the article, had no record of prostitution: Mary Meehan, Swanda Summers and Carol Christensen. This has a double-edged significance. First, if these girls weren't prostitutes, how could the Riverman pick them up using the john routine? These three girls may indicate that the Riverman had another approach. Of course, alternative explanations are that he didn't kill these three, or that they were in fact prostitutes.

The second significant aspect of the fact that only a couple of the forty or more Green River victims had no record of prostitution is how perceptive he was in selecting his victims. He obviously focused on prostitutes, but I would expect him to make a mistake occasionally and approach a woman in the area who was clearly a prostitute. It may be that when he made contact with a woman that he would make inquiries to determine whether or not she was a prostitute, and if she wasn't he'd move on.¹⁹

2. In the cases of four victims the facts tend to indicate that they were not soliciting at the time of their disappearances. Kase Lee was on her way to a nearby grocery store. Terri Milligan was on her way to a restaurant. Marie Malvar went to use a pay telephone. Constance Noan was on her way to her mother's house. Of these four cases, Noan's is most revealing and I will discuss her situation shortly.

As in the cases of the three girls, who may not have been prostitutes, the fact that these four girls may not have been actively soliciting at the time they were abducted tends to establish that the Riverman had to use an approach other than posing as a john. The alternative explanations are that he didn't abduct them or that these four did decide to offer to accept a proposition at a time when it was believed they were doing something else.

3. Ten of the Green River victims were last seen during daylight hours. The exact time of the disappearance is not known in any of the Green River cases. This is largely due to the life style of the victims. They weren't the kind of people to keep rigid schedules. In those cases where a time when a victim was last seen can be given with some degree of accuracy, the time given is not necessarily anywhere close to when they were actually abducted. But I gather from what Bob Keppel told me that there are a few instances where the time given is a reasonable approximation of the time of abduction. Noan, for example, who was last heard from at 3:00pm in the afternoon is one of those.

What I am getting at is that a number of the victims were probably abducted during daylight hours and such is evidence of the confidence the Riverman had in his ability to abduct his victims without making a fuss that would draw attention, especially in broad daylight.

4. As I mentioned in footnote 16, six of the victims were known to be registered in local motels. This may only be a coincidence in terms of how they were abducted. But it is safe to say that the Riverman was aware that many of the prostitutes working Pacific Highway South, for example, lived in nearby motels. If he were to see a teenage girl leaving a motel on foot in an area where prostitutes worked it would be one important clue that he had a young prostitute in his sights.

So putting together what little I know about the last movements of some of the Green River victims, let me give you one possible abduction scenario. He begins to cruise along an area of PHS one afternoon. He knows some of the places where prostitutes hang out. He drives at the speed limit, doesn't gawk and doesn't otherwise draw attention to himself as he cruises back and forth. He may park in a store or restaurant lot and casually stake out a motel or phone booth or mini market he has learned to be frequented by girls who work the streets in the area.

He may see a girl here and there who qualifies as a potential victim in his mind. He has a finely tuned sense of awareness when it comes to evaluating whether or not a girl is a prostitute. It may have become something of an art to him and art developed through the experience of much observation and many contacts. That doesn't mean he has used prostitutes often. In fact, he may avoid using prostitutes in the area from which he has abducted them to avoid identification.

He will not necessarily approach the first or any girl he sees who fits as he cruises and lurks about. Many factors have to be right in addition to her appearance. Among other things, she must be in a location where he can approach her while she is alone and without other people nearby taking note. And since it's unlikely he would drive right up to his victim along the roadside he must also be able to park his car in an out-of-the-way location if at all possible because 1] if for some reason she rebuffs him she won't see his car and 2] if she goes with him, no one will see them getting in his car together.

He sits in the lot for a while and when nothing suitable shows up, he moves on, not wanting to stay in one place too long. He begins to drive along PHS again and after a couple of blocks sees a girl in a phone booth on the other side of the highway. He scans her quickly as he passes. Her age, general appearance and presence in an area where prostitutes work tentatively qualify her as a potential victim but he's not sure. He turns left at the next stop light, turns around and heads back down PHS toward the phone booth. He parks off the road in a space not likely to draw much attention a short distance from the phone booth.

He reaches a vantage point where he can get a closer look. Her clothing, makeup and hairstyle all indicate to him she's what he's looking for. This together with her age, the area she is in, and the fact that her use of the phone booth as he has observed prostitutes using booths in the area, further confirm his belief she's a prostitute.

Because she's alone and there aren't other people in the vicinity except for the traffic rushing by on the highway, he decides to move in on her. When she leaves the phone booth he walks up behind her, excuses himself, and identifies himself as an undercover police officer. He judges her demeanor beforehand as best he could and decided that she would not resist this ruse. He flashes his badge and ID. He informs her he is a vice officer and that a girl fitting her description is being sought in the area for soliciting prostitution. He requests her name and ID, calmly and business like. No one driving by pays any attention.

He informs her she's under arrest and warns her not to make matters worse by resisting arrest. They walk back to his car. He pulls a weapon to intimidate her, then binds and gags her.

In my October 27 letter I said that I didn't think that the Riverman used the kind of ruse employed by Bianchi and Bono on the Hillside cases, i.e. posing as cops. During my meeting with Keppel and Reichert we discussed this ruse and I said that if the Riverman was posing as a cop I would expect that there would be some instance where he would try this ruse on an intended victim and for one reason or another, if something went wrong, she would not end up going away with him. (Someone may have come along who knew the girl while he was talking to her or maybe she violently refused to go.) In any event, I told them they should be able to find girls who could tell them about being approached by someone posing as a cop.²⁰

It's my recollection that they said they hadn't run across any reports of prostitutes being approached by someone posing as a cop in the areas where the Green River victims disappeared from. What changed my thinking on this, and what makes me think that the cop ruse is a very plausible ruse in the Green River cases, has to do with the facts and circumstances I referred to earlier, surround the three girls who may not have been prostitutes, and the four victims, who had a record of prostitution but may not have been working at the time they disappeared.

To me, the most striking example in this regard that I have come across involves Constance Noan. Noan, as you know, was reported to have called her mother around 3:00pm on June 8, 1983, and said she'd arrive at her mother's house in 20 minutes. She had her own car, which was later found at the Red Lion Inn, and a pay check waiting for her.

On the surface, at least, all the circumstances seem to suggest that she wasn't seeking someone to pay for sex after she called her mother. She had a car, so she didn't need to hitchhike. It was daylight, so it's unlikely she was snatched off the street physically and violently. How did the Riverman approach her then? That Noan was approached by someone passing as a cop in one very plausible explanation for Noan's abduction. I am not saying it is the only one by any means, but it does explain the abruptness of her disappearance in light of her phone call.

On the other hand, Noan may have encountered someone with an offer she couldn't refuse, following her call to her mother, and she decided that her mother would just have to wait.²¹ Or, maybe her mother was mistaken in some way about the phone call, which would drastically alter the possibilities concerning the way she was abducted. No amount of guessing, however, is going to fill in all the blanks about how Noan was abducted, but it does seem that there's a lot more to it than the Riverman approaching her and asking her for sex for money.²²

The only value of this discussion about modus operandi is to try to figure out how he may be operating today, as well as what questions to ask those who may have seen him doing his thing in the past. While any trail he may have left in the abduction of Noan and the other cases grows cold with the passage of time, what few facts and circumstances they do offer fascinate me for the broad outline they yield and indicate what to look for if you ever set up surveillance of an area or when you interview prostitutes, other street people, motel owners and etc.

-end

Bundy letter from Starke, Florida

01-15-1985/Outline-Footnotes

1. The list I'm referring to contains the names of 38 young women murdered between 1973 and 1983. The first name on the list is Potter. I don't know who composed the list.

2. See footnote for list.

3. This required a certain level of skill, abhorrent and destructive though it is. He was not born with the skill, but like any other skill, he acquired it, consciously and/or unconsciously, over time. It is impossible to say, but I would hazard a guess that his first murder occurred between six months and a year before the first Green River victim was found, and there was almost certainly a period prior to his first murder where he may have acted out in ways which fell just short of actual murder.

4. This is why there is the need for a sophisticated study of missing persons reports filed in Oregon and Washington in 1981, 1982, 1983, 84 and 85.

5. This suggests the need to mount some kind of program to monitor and keep track of prostitutes.

6. "Has Green River Killer's deadly [illegible] spread to Portland?," Seattle Times, January 1, 1985.

7. I'm sure the possibility was not lost on the people on the streets, as reflected by the statement of one Portland prostitute quoted in the above article, who said, "It takes nothing for him to jump on the freeway and come down". He could easily have been doing that for years without anyone noting.

8. It's unlikely that all seven murdered prostitutes mentioned in the Portland article were killed by seven different people. The Riverman may not have killed them but it is certain there is one and probably more than one, serial killer working the Portland area.

9. The “B” list of Green River victims:

1. Leanna Wilccox, 16 y/o, disappeared 1/19/82 in Tacoma. Found 1/21/82 in Federal Way.
2. Virginia Taylor, 19, disappeared 1/29/82 from West Seattle, found same day in same area.
3. Joan Conner, 16, disappeared early February, 82 from North Seattle and found in Fremont area of Seattle February 5, 1982.
4. Oneida Peterson, 24, disappeared in Snohomish County and was found February 8, 1982 near Sulton in Snohomish County.
5. Unidentified body found in March, 1982, near LaConner in Clark County.
6. Theresa Kline, 27, disappeared in late April 1982, from North Seattle and found April 27, 1982, near Carkeek Park in North Seattle.
7. Trina Hunter, 16, disappeared December 29, 1982, north of Vancouver, WA.
8. Linda Rule, 16, disappeared September 26, 1982 from North Seattle and found in early February in North Seattle.
9. Joanne Hovland, disappeared 5/8/83 from Everett and found 6/5/83 near Granite Falls.
10. Kimberly Reames, 27, disappeared 6/12/83 from Tacoma and found 6/13/83 in Nisqually River in South Pierce County.
11. [blank] Anderson, disappeared 6/26/184 from Tacoma and found 8/12/84 in Chehalis River.
12. Tonja Harry, 19, disappeared 7/8/83 from Portland and found 7/9/83 in Portland.
13. Essle Jackson, 24, disappeared 2/13/83 from Portland and found 3/23/83 in Portland.
14. Kimberly Ramsey, 19, disappeared 10/26/84 in Portland and found same day

on bank of Columbia River east of Portland.

10. I have listed nine steps for looking for the Riverman in Portland in a separate letter to Bob Keppel.

11. It is significant to note that the first of the five victims found in the Green River in July 1982 was Wendy Coffield who was last seen in the Tacoma area. It would appear that her killer took her body north to dump it in the river. Coffield is one of four young women to disappear from Tacoma and die under similar circumstances but Coffield is the only one listed as a Green River victim. The other three are Wilcox, Reames and Anderson.

12. The three Portland victims on my "B" list in particular. The case of Trina Hunter may be especially significant because her body was found 36-40 miles north in Washington. Did the Riverman dump her off on the way home?

13. One of my criteria is not that a "B" list victim is a prostitute because I want to take into account the possibility that 1] he made a mistake and killed a victim who wasn't one, 2] the victim was a prostitute and no one knew it and/or 3] he intentionally selected a victim who wasn't a prostitute.

14. The victims without arrest records for prostitution according to the information I have, are Meehan, Summers and Christensen. Of course, the possibility also exists that the Riverman didn't kill these three. Christensen in particular seems out of place 1] because her body was found fully clothed and 2] because of its location. In any case, since there were [and are] a number of serial killers active in the Pacific Northwest, it's inevitable that occasionally their victim class and MO are going to overlap, especially when it comes to prostitutes and street people, who are common victims of serial murders.

15. Age distribution of "A" and "B" list victims [shown by age/numbers of victims in that age category]: 15[2]; 16 [7]; 17 [7]; 18 [6]; 19 [6] 20 [3]; 21 [1]; 22 [1]; 23 [1]; 24 [3]; 25 [0]; 26 [2]; 27 [1]; 31 [1]; 37 [1].

16. One interesting aspect to point out here is what I call the motel connection. Six of the victims were known to be at or leaving a motel when last seen. [Bonner, Bush, Meehan, Sherrill, McGunises and Tomson] The Riverman may have discovered that the young prostitutes who worked the Pacific Highway South area often lived in the cheap hotels in the area. I wouldn't be surprised if he staked them out at times waiting for one of these girls to emerge.

17. It would be a serious mistake to view him as lazy. Considering his level of activity in 1982 and 1983, he was expending an enormous amount of time and energy in the pursuit of his victims. It is true that the kind of victims he preys upon are much more accessible than other women, but his reason for singling out prostitutes may only be potentially related to their mobility.

18. I read somewhere of reports of female high school students in the PHS area who were approached by men seeking prostitutes. I wonder if the Riverman didn't make the mistake occasionally and once he discovered they weren't prostitutes, he backed off.

19. Of course, it's also quite likely he had observed some of his victims beforehand actually picked up by men in a way that would confirm in his mind that they were prostitutes.

20. I did read about an incident that occurred sometime in 1984 in Portland, where a man tried and failed to pick up some prostitutes posing as a cop. It didn't seem to me that this was the Riverman because 1] in that incident more than one woman was involved and 2] it was done very crudely.

21. Have you ever watched a syndicated ½-hour special on the street program called "Anything for Money". It's meant to be a humorous show where unsuspecting people are filmed by a hidden camera as an actor approaches them and sees how much money it'll take to get them to do some fairly outrageous things...very, very instructive. I suggest you get ahold of a few episodes.

22. I suppose there are countless lures and approaches he could have used. The fact is that each victim he approached posed a unique set of variables. She could be leaving a motel, standing in front of a convenience store or walking down the street, but whether or not he passed as a cop or john or used some other lure [the lack of marks or bruises on the few victims found before they decomposed seems to rule out a violent approach this much is the same: he unobtrusively hunted and watched for a likely victim, and when he spotted one, he used all his perceptive skills and experience to assess her potential as a victim and to approach her at a time when she was alone. Once a victim was in his vehicle his methods were so effective that no one has been known to ever escape from him. Considering that his victims were streetwise, that many carried weapons, and that many were aware of, the murders of fellow prostitutes before they themselves were abducted, this last fact is the most impressive of all.

Bundy letter from Starke, Florida

01-28-1985

Dear [Task Force]:

I just received your letter of January 23, 1985, a few minutes ago. I am not going to allow myself to procrastinate writing to you any longer.

I apologize for taking so long to write to you. On January 15 I was determined to turn over a new leaf and answer your letters and being to express the enormous number of thoughts and ideas concerning the Green River case that have occurred to me since our meeting in October 1984. After writing over 20 pages to you, I read what I had written and began having serious doubts that I was telling you anything worthwhile. For instance, I rambled on for 17 pages on the short-comings and inherent incompleteness of victim lists in the Green River case in particular and serial murder cases in general. I was consumed by the misgiving that I was wasting your time in addition to feelings of my own lack of articulation on the subject. So I put the letter down and haven't been able to get back into it, even though not a day passed that I didn't think about it.

The topic I had chosen to discuss in the letter was this: The Riverman's Victims: some thoughts on how many he has actually killed and how he selects and abducts his victims.

The letter I received from you today, which had enclosed with it an article on similar cases in Portland, tended to confirm many of my thoughts on the subject. When I read the article about the Portland area murders, I knew I was on the right track, and I felt a sense of urgency to get down to the business of giving you my point of view on the problems you face trying to solve such cases.

I will get back to my letter of January 15 and with some luck and effort I hope to mail it to you this week. For now, I want to briefly list my major reactions to the article on the Portland cases:

1. I considered that the statements by the Portland detectives may not represent their true feelings. Even if you and they were certain that there was a link

between the Portland and Green River cases, my advice to you would be not to admit it in public, even to down play the speculation. I'd do this because I wouldn't want the Riverman to think I was on to his activity in the Portland area. I wouldn't want to drive him away.

If, in fact, the Riverman is active around Portland, let him think you're not on to him, and let him believe that he is relatively free to do his thing there, as opposed to say Pacific Highway South, where he has received such intense publicity. Let him think he has gone far enough to escape the heat and then place those areas where Portland prostitutes hang out under intense surveillance, similar to the kind we discussed during our meeting. Maybe even decoys could be used. Take the offensive.

2. If anyone in law enforcement in Portland or Seattle really believes that the Riverman isn't responsible for one or more of those Portland murders he ought to go live in a tent on Mount St. Helens. It makes sense for the Riverman to go hunting in the Portland area because:

a. It has a large population of prostitutes;

b. It is a short drive from the Seattle/Tacoma area. Let's assume the Riverman works. If he does, he could easily drive to Portland after getting off work, do his thing and be back home in time to get a few hours' sleep before going to work again. It would be nothing for him to drive to Portland.

c. In fact, one would expect the Riverman to drive and drive around a great deal. Mobility is one of the hallmarks of such a series of murders. The Riverman may in fact be familiar with the problem police have in linking murders committed hundreds of miles apart, not to mention that there have undoubtedly been murders in King and Pierce the Riverman has committed and are known to the police that have not yet been linked to him. With a three or four hour drive, the Riverman could easily range between Vancouver, BC and Portland. I would expect him to range that far...frequently, not just to avoid detection but to discover real hunting grounds. The Riverman is a hunter and his kind of hunting needs driving.

3. I can understand the desire to list as official Green River victims only those victims where there is the highest degree of certainty that they were victims of a common assailant. Unfortunately, in practical terms, that has resulted in a victim

list limited to victims found in King County. But the Green River murders have never been and are not now solely a King County problem.

The Riverman isn't a compulsive robot. His car and the freeway system have allowed him to roam throughout the Pacific Northwest, as I noted above. State and county lines don't deter him. I know that sounds ridiculously obvious, but why then can't Portland authorities recognize that the Riverman has almost certainly killed in their town? Maybe they do recognize this though. I don't know.

4. I also understand that there is no hard, indisputable evidence to link the Portland murders to the Green River murders. But does there need to be at this point? These cases are in the ballpark geographically, time-wise, and demographically. They fit. They don't have to fit exactly. Like I said, the Riverman isn't a robot. There are going to be certain variations in his behavior. They may appear random and disassociated to you, but to him, for whatever reason, whatever exigency, they made sense. Not all his victims need be prostitutes. Not all are going to be strangled the same way or left in the same way.

5. So what do you do about the Portland cases and other cases outside of King County? The article you sent said, "Investigators have a system of rating certain factors before they add names to the Green River list". That's the first I heard about such a rating system. I guess there is not great harm in such a rating system, as long as you realize that it's got to be flawed in that there is no way it can account for all the variations in the Riverman's modus operandi, the constant evolution of his personality, and hence, all the victims he has actually killed. There's no harm unless it prevents you from looking outside King County to obvious links to Tacoma and Portland, for example.

Here's what I suggest:

a. Have an "A list" of dead and missing and a "B" list. Your "A list" would contain the names of dead and missing persons that are probably victims of the Riverman. Basically, your "A list" includes the 28 victims whose remains have been found and are official Green River victims and the list of 10-15 names of young women officially listed as missing in the Green River case.

The "B" list would contain names of dead or missing persons who are possibly

connected with the Green River case.

My rating system would definitely be broader, less restrictive than the one mentioned in the Portland article. I believe it is far more dangerous from an investigator's point-of-view to have a victim list that is too small than one that is too large.

My criteria for candidates of the Riverman would include: If a murder victim: 1) was found between Vancouver, BC and Portland OR; 2) in 1981, 1982, 1983, or 1984; 3) in an outdoor and out-of-the-way, but not necessarily remote, location; 4) and who was between 15 and 25 years-old 5) asphyxiated to death, and 6] whose body was nude or partially clad,...Then I would put her on the "b" list. (You notice that I have avoided a requirement of being a prostitute. I have a number of reasons for this which I will explain in a later letter, but for now I'll say that just because a murder victim wasn't known or believed to be a prostitute doesn't mean she wasn't one or that the Riverman didn't think she was one for some reason.) Among those I would include on my "B list" of possible Green River victims are:

1. Leann Wilcox, Tacoma found 1-22-82
2. Unidentified body, La Conner, March 1982
3. Virginia Taylor, North Seattle, found January 27, 1982
4. Joann Connor, North Seattle, found February 1982
5. Onieda Peterson, Snohomish County, found February 8, 1982
6. Theresa Kline, North Seattle, found April 27, 1982
7. Trina Hunter, Portland, found December 6, 1982. (It's significant to note that her body was found north of Portland in Washington off Interstate 5)
8. Linda Rule, North Seattle, found September 26, 1982
9. Joanne Hovland, Everett, found June 5, 1983
10. Kimberly Reames, Tacoma, found June 13, 1983

11. Essle Jackson, Portland, found March 23, 1983
12. Kimberly Ramsey, Portland, found October 26, 1984
13. [blank] Anderson, Tacoma, found August 17, 1984
14. Vickie Williams, Portland, found -

I am sure you can think of any number of reasons why many of those 14 girls shouldn't be linked to the Riverman. I am dealing only with the most superficial facts when I listed them. The point is however to keep in mind that there are many of the Riverman's victims that aren't on the official Green River victim lists, who weren't found in King County. Fact is, there are undoubtedly victims of the Riverman who won't appear on anyone's list. Such being the inherent incompleteness of the lists. The important thing is to make the lists as complete and inclusive as possible. Why?

A list never went out and arrested anyone. Lists and computers won't solve this case. What I am attempting to illustrate by discussing lists and such is to show that the Riverman has not confined himself to King County. He has ranged all over the Pacific Northwest and that certainly includes Portland. If the Riverman is still alive, healthy and free and living in the Pacific Northwest he continues to go about his killing ways. In 1984, if 1982 and 1983 are any indicators, he has killed between 10-20 more. There will be more in 1985.

What I am saying is to look at the "big picture" to help you decide where and how to look for the Riverman today. Portland is one logical place to focus on. Ask yourself, where would the Green River case be today if it weren't for the sensation of those five bodies found in the Green River in a couple months' time? I'll bet there wouldn't be a Task Force, let alone an investigator. Portland hasn't had a shocking series of discoveries such as those that occurred in the Green River, but that doesn't mean the Riverman couldn't have killed just as many young women in the Portland area as he has in the Seattle area. Runaways and prostitutes are just as hard to trace and just as mobile in Portland or Seattle.

Thanks for writing.

I received your letters of November 30 and December 14, 1984. Thanks.

If there are any questions you have about the things I have said and written about the Green River case, please don't hesitate to ask. I should have the long letter I mentioned to you earlier in the mail later this week.

Take care. Sincerely,

ted

Bundy letter from Starke, Florida

02-03-1985

[Task Force Investigator]

Seattle, WA

Dear [Task Force]:

When I wrote to you on January 28 I mentioned a letter I had started writing to you on January 15 on the subject of the Riverman's victims: some thoughts on expanding the number of victims believed to be involved and how he selects and abducts his victims. The January 15 letter got stalled, but I began working on it again on January 29 and it grew to over 60 pages with 40 footnotes. The thing has become unmanageable.

There may be some stuff in it you might find useful, but it seemed lost amongst the verbage. My verbosity is not just an embarrassment, but a waste of your time. So, I've decided to rewrite, restructure and edit the thing to see if I can make it more useful to you.

I sure could use a word processor right now. I could whip this mess in to shape in a day. As it stands now, I must write it by hand which is, not only a drudgery, but an exercise in illegibility.

I have had some more thoughts on the Portland murders, their probable link to the Green River murders, and some things that come to mind whereby the Portland situation could be turned to your advantage. While it would be helpful to view my suggestions in the context of the more comprehensive treatment I've been working on, I don't want to delay sending along the these thoughts about Portland. I'll send them along now and hope they make sense on their own.

The article you sent me in your January 23 letter (Has Green River killer's grip spread to Portland?" Seattle Times, January 1, 1985) helped crystalize some

thinking I've been doing about Portland for several months. I realize there's a great deal I don't know about the Portland cases. I realize that not only isn't there any conclusive proof that says that the same person who killed the Green River victims also killed one or more of the Portland victims...but there are also certain differences between the Green River and Portland cases.

But I realize this too: there are differences between the murders of officially listed in the Green River case. Two of the major factors that link the 45 or so official victims together are the areas where they disappeared from (downtown Seattle and Pacific Highway South/south King County) and/or the places where their bodies/remains were found (south, southeast and eastern King County).

As I said in my January 28 letter, the Riverman didn't stop at the King County line any more than I-5 does. He could easily range from Vancouver, BC to Portland Oregon looking for victims and most certainly has. The Riverman was just as mindful of the links between prostitution activity between Seattle, Tacoma and Portland as the newspaper that reported the fact.

There's no question in my mind that the Riverman has searched for and killed victims in the Portland area. Is there any doubt in your mind? It's one of the few things I can state with any certainty in this matter.

Sure, there is some question whether he killed any one or more of the seven girls listed in the article on the Portland case. But please don't let the differences between the Portland cases and the Green River cases throw you. Why?

Because the Riverman is human; he is prone to inconsistency and change. Even among the Green River cases you find some in the river, some buried, some in the mountains, some by the airport, some nude, some partially clad [one, Christensen was fully clothed], and a couple who may not have been prostitutes.

If you believe the Riverman worked the Portland area, then the differences between the Portland and Green River cases become less important than the similarities evident in at least four of the Portland cases: Trina Hunter, Tonya Harry, Essie Jackson and Kimberly Ramseys. And there are probably a number of others who have yet to be found. These four are in the Riverman's ballpark, young prostitutes asphyxiated and found in out-of-the-way places.

Okay, I realize that talking about a connection between the Portland and Green River cases is hardly a brilliant deduction. It's a connection that certainly isn't

lost on the girls who work Portland's streets. The reason I am pushing the likelihood of such a connection so hard is because I believe the Portland situation offers the Green River Task Force a unique opportunity to look for the Riverman in the "here-and-now" instead of sifting through mountains of cold, two and three year old cases.

If, I say "if", Kimberly Ramsey, the latest Portland victim who disappeared on October 26, 1984, is one of the Riverman's victims, she represents by far the freshest and most recent of all his victims known to the public. While the trail of the Riverman grew cold in the Seattle/Tacoma area during 1984, with no officially confirmed kills occurring during that period, the Ramsey case would indicate that the Riverman is still active in the Portland area at least.

Just as important, he may be seeking victims there with a certain confidence and sense of impunity that comes from knowing certain murders and disappearances in the Portland area he is responsible for have not been linked to the Green River murders. He couldn't be blamed if he felt he had escaped much of the heat caused by the publicity and investigation in the Seattle area.

One of your very best chances to catch this guy is by focusing your investigation on the area where he is still seeking out victims. This is why I am so enthusiastic about the otherwise sad news from Portland.

And here are my suggestions, for what they are worth. I don't for a moment believe that you haven't thought of them already.

1. Notwithstanding a quote in the Portland article by a Portland detective who said, "No one believes we have a serial killer involved. My personal belief is that the deaths are a by-product of prostitution." Police in Portland must be convinced that the Riverman almost certainly has, and probably still is, cruising Portland's streets looking for victims. In my opinion, the arguments supporting this proposition are undeniable. Portland and Task Force investigators should join forces to actively hunt for the Riverman in that city.

2. Police spokesmen with the Task Force and Portland authorities should continue to deny and downplay any involvement by the Green River killer in the Portland murders. The Riverman must believe his activities in the Portland area have escaped attention. He must not be driven away from Portland or otherwise be made more cautious by news that the police know he's working in Portland.

3. Begin street and area surveillance of those parts of Portland [e.g. North east Union Ave] where prostitutes are known to hang out. There are certain behaviors I'd look for in the men seen cruising the areas that could set the Riverman apart, and I'll discuss these in detail in the letter I am writing on how he selects his victims. Of course, one obvious thing to look for are vehicles with Washington license plates, although it's entirely likely he has taken precautions to hide the Washington origins of his vehicle.

4. Go back and do thorough searches of the areas where the bodies of Hunter, Harry, Jackson and Ramsey were found. The experience in the Green River murders, of course, indicates the possibility that other victims may have been disposed in these areas.

5. Do a detailed study of men arrested for crimes against women [e.g. assault, rape, kidnapping, etc.] since 1981, especially those involving prostitutes, in Multnomah County. Compare with a similar study in King and Pierce Counties and look for men arrested in Washington and Oregon.

6. Develop a list of names of men picked up in Multnomah County for soliciting since 1981 and compare with a similar list of names developed in King and Pierce Counties and cross reference with arrest listings above.

7. Question Portland prostitutes about men who have approached them with any unusual proposals or offers, including any who claimed to be police officers. I know this covers a lot of ground, especially considering the nature of the streetwalkers' profession, but I feel like there's potential here. I know if I read such interviews I could spot lines and ruses of the kind the Riverman might use. Have them pay special attention to men who approach them on foot while the prostitute in question is by herself, alone.

8. Policewomen posing as hookers. I recognize that this is a dangerous and controversial suggestion. In addition to the obvious danger, it would be a little like looking for a needle in a haystack, but in my opinion, I think there are things these decoys could do to draw the Riverman to them.

Policewomen posing as hookers pose a special problem for the Riverman and one of which I'm sure he is very mindful, and one for which he uses all his unique intuitive and observational skills to guard against. This threat doesn't appear to have deterred him in the past, though.

Anyway, done properly [an] undercover cop could overcome the Riverman's apprehensions. First, I would undertake a thorough study of all that is known about the appearance of the known Green River victims just prior to their disappearances. Hair style, jewelry, make-up, and type, style and color of clothing could be studied to see if the Riverman showed any kind of preference in the appearance of his victims. (I have not read or heard anything regarding the way the victims looked and dressed when they were last seen, and I believe it is critical to understanding the Riverman.)

The decoys would then dress and look in a way most likely to attract the Riverman.

I would have the decoys live in seedy, nearby motels. I would have them move around alone and on foot as much as possible, making a series of calls from phone booths, shop in nearby convenience stores, and eat alone in fast food places. Occasional encounters/pickups would be staged to make it appear as though they were working.

They would have to be made up to appear as though they were in their late teens or early 20s. I would have at least one decoy working night and day, since we know that in the past at least, the data indicate he worked day and night. Of course, there are many more details involved here, not the least of which is how far a decoy goes with someone who approaches her before her backup moves in.

9. Reevaluate stolen car incident. Back in September or October 1984 before our meeting I read a story in the Tacoma News Tribune about an incident in Portland about a man in a car stolen in Seattle who tried to pick up some Portland prostitute. I can't remember now all that the article said but I remember that at the time I discounted it as something related to the Green River case. It sounded too crude and too messy to be the Riverman. I remember that we discussed the incident when you met with me and you seemed to dismiss it too. Did you have specific reasons for dismissing its possible relevance?

Unless the man driving the car was arrested, I would take another look at that incident. Someday, even the Riverman is going to make a horrendous, amateurish mistake, act stupidly and impulsively, do something out of character and foolish. He probably already has at least once. Could the stolen car incident have been one of those times?

10. Missing persons study. A list of all women between 15 and 30 who have been reported as missing in Multnomah County since 1982 should be compiled. A special attempt should be made to see which of the missing women had records for prostitution. There are many flaws inherent in such a study, but it may be possible, flaws notwithstanding, to detect a pattern in the disappearances.

Well, there you are, my ten easy steps to hunting for the Riverman in Portland. I welcome your questions and comments. As I asked in my last letter, where would the Green River investigation be today if it hadn't been for the five bodies discovered in the Green River in July and August 1982, a sensation that galvanized both public concern and the police investigation? I submit that it'd be lacking for more than just a name. Portland hasn't had its "Green River" which doesn't mean there isn't a series problem down there as yet unseen, bodies as yet undiscovered. The police statement that "my personal belief is that the deaths are a by-product of prostitution" is unbelievable and defies much of what is known about serial murders in general and the Riverman in particular. Trina Hunter's nude, asphyxiated body was found in Clark County in December of 1982, giving every indication that this black prostitute's killer dumped her off as he headed back north. Who does that remind you of?

Please get back to me soon. Take care.

Sincerely, ted

PS – Please share this with [another member of the Task Force] PPS – I have developed a rough outline of my non-profile of the Riverman. It's a "non-profile" since my experience has been that profiles are generally misleading, pretentious and somewhat irrelevant to the issue of apprehension. I'll send it to you after I've finished this piece on my thoughts on how the Riverman selects and apprehends his victims. PPPS-I need some input from you. The more I have, the more I give. You help me, I help you. Below are a few things I'd like you to do.

1. Would you mind letting me know what, if any, reservations you have to

believing that a link exists between Portland and Green River cases.

2. How about giving me a call? I'd call you but I'm not allowed to make outgoing calls. Sometimes more is accomplished by talking than writing. Maybe it could be a conference so that you and other Task Force members could question me about what I have said and written about the Green River case. I am sure it could be managed if you contacted the Superintendent and stressed the importance of the call. Or you could work through the FBI again.

3. Do you have any detailed info on what some of the victims were last seen wearing that you could share with me.

4. Are you sure there have been no reliable reports by prostitutes along PHS in 1982 and 1983, who say they were approached by a man passing as a vice cop?

5. Were the records of the Red Lion Inn checked to determine whether or not either Constance Noan or someone she could have been with were registered there or seen there?

6. Has there been any attempt to compare hairs and fibers between the Portland and Green River cases?

PPPPS-Might as well make that Step 11 in the Portland Green River Investigation: Compare hairs and fibers between the Portland and Green River cases.

I can't seem to close the letter. Let me try to do it this way. I treat all our communication with complete confidentiality. I have discussed the matters we have discussed and written about with no one else, not with my attorney or my wife or my fellow prisoners. No one else. Trust and confidentiality on both sides is absolutely essential and critical to the success of our present and future cooperation. I will discuss this case with no one without your permission nor will I share with anyone anything you have given me.

I will await your reply to this letter before I send another letter.

Bundy letter from Starke, Florida

02-03-1985

[Green River Task Force]

Seattle, WA

Dear [Task Force],

I thought it was about time to write to you directly. I have written to you three times since our meeting in November 1984, and sent them to [Task Force]. I hope you have had a chance to see those letters, dated November 18, 1984; January 28, 1985 and February 3, 1985.

The last two letters I sent to [Task Force] concerned my thoughts on the likelihood of a link between the Green River murders and several murders in the Portland area that have occurred since 1982. I had been unaware of the Portland murders until I read an article sent to me on January 23, 1985, entitled, "Has the Green River killer's deadly grip spread to Portland?" (Seattle Times, January 1, 1985). I suggest that a more pertinent question would have been "Has the Green River killer been commuting to Portland all along?"

Anyway, in my last letter I outlined eleven ideas to expand the search for the Riverman to Portland.

I am working simultaneously on two other letters. One deals with my thoughts on how the Riverman selects and abducts his victims. My thoughts on this subject have changed somewhat since our meeting, but my attempt to put them on paper has proven a little frustrating. My initial draft ran over 60 pages with 40 footnotes. It was poorly written and wordy and I am [now] in the process of redrafting it.

I am also working on an outline of my impressions of the Riverman, the unique understandable, surprisingly normal, everyday person that he is. Only the faintest of outlines emerge from my reading of the facts and circumstances of the

cases, but some broad outlines do emerge.

In the meantime, I decided to write to you today and express some ideas on a matter you asked me to give some thought to: lists of names and other data that when analyzed by computer might yield the names of possible suspects.

Late last year, [Task Force] sent me a coded list of some 31 lists (A through AE) compiled at some point during the investigation of the disappearances and/or deaths of Linda Healy, et.al. back in the mid -1970s. That list analysis approach is something of a long-shot, but I guess a lot of things are in such an investigation.

What puzzles me about the Healy list of lists is that it appears, in part at least, to have been compiled after my arrest, in Salt Lake City in October of 1975. It seems to me that the value of such an analysis is not what it says when it's been drawn up with a particular suspect in mind, but what it says when you have no suspects worthy of the name.

Let me put it this way: if you had a first name, description, and make and model of vehicle of a man who was seen with one of the Green River victims immediately before her disappearance...and a number of known possible suspects in your files fitting that description and owning such a vehicle, what would you do? Would you say, "We have too many suspects fitting this description, let's try to narrow them down by seeing how many also appear on one or two or three other lists?" Maybe a thinning of such a list would be warranted, but it also might be like peeling an already peeled potato.

What I am saying is that this kind of thing can be pushed too far. I don't think it should be expected to be able to narrow a list of several hundred down to five or ten. If you had the names of 50 or 100 or 200 or 300 men fitting such a description, wouldn't it be better to try and question them all than reduce the size of the list and risk eliminating the man you've been looking for?

We'll discuss the Healy list analysis in more detail later. Among the lists of names/dates I'd be interested in seeing analyzed in the Green River investigation are:

1. A list of names of persons in King, Pierce, Snohomish, and Thurston Counties who have been arrested since 1980 for violent crimes against women; e.g. assault, rape, kidnapping, attempted murder, etc.

Hardly a brilliant thought, I know. You have probably been doing this for some time. What surprises me about the 31 lists in the Healy list of lists is there is no mention of a list of persons arrested for violent crimes against women. There may be a perfectly good explanation for this, but I can't think of one. Obviously the vast majority of men who are arrested for rape, assault, or some other violent crime, against a woman are not serial murderers or on the way to becoming serial murderers. In the Green River case, for example, there is a very good chance that the Riverman has no criminal record of violence against women at all, but there is an equally good chance he does.

A criminal record of violence short of murder in the case of a serial killer like the Riverman could be indicative of a number of things:

a. Prior to committing his first murder, an act of violence may represent a link in a chain of increasing violent behavior ultimately resulting in murder. As I think I've mentioned to you before, there is no doubt in my mind that the Riverman didn't just wake up some morning in early July 1982 and decide for the first time to go out and harm a young prostitute, which turned out to be Wendy Coffield. In my opinion, and that is all it is, the Riverman could have been killing people for six months to a year at least prior to July 1982 and could have been displaying gradually more violent non-lethal behavior long before that.

b. It may be that before he killed his first victim the Riverman may have intended to kill someone but his lack of skill and experience resulted in him committing acts of violence for which he may have been arrested, which fell short of his goal. In this context acts of violence can be seen a part of a trial and error learning experience that helped him become a proficient and elusive killer.

c. Once the Riverman had begun killing, an act of violence short of murder could represent any one of three things:

1. something happened that prevented him from killing his intended victim as he had planned

2. he made a conscious decision to spare his victim, or

3. he may be the type of individual who exhibits non-lethal violent behavior towards some victims but when it comes to prostitutes he kills.

This is all guess work, I admit. A criminal record of violence for a serial killer

like the Riverman could represent any combination of the above factors. Anyway, when compiling this list of men arrested for some act or acts of violence against women, you would certainly want to focus on and flag those cases where the victim was a hooker. By itself, this kind of list has little value. However, if you find that a man attempted to rape a woman in Seattle, beat a prostitute in Tacoma and was picked up in Portland for attempting to pay for the services of a prostitute in Portland who turned out to be an undercover cop, then you may have something.

2. A list of names of men in King, Pierce, Snohomish and Thurston Counties who have been arrested since 1980 for propositioning an undercover cop he thought was a prostitute.
3. A list of names of possible suspects reported to the Task Force by the general public.
4. A list of names of persons issued field cards by police officers for trespassing, loitering, vagrancy and etc. in areas where there is a lot of prostitution activity. I would include Aurora North, Pacific Highway South, and Ponders Corner areas at least since 1980.
5. A list of names of persons cited for moving or non-moving traffic violations in the areas of prostitution mentioned above since 1980.
6. A list of names of the male friends, acquaintances, family members, and customers of the dead and/or missing victims officially connected with the Green River investigation.
7. A list of names of persons arrested in King, Pierce, Snohomish and Thurston Counties for impersonating police officers since 1980.
8. A list of men who have purchased handguns in the above listed four counties since 1980.
9. A list of the names of persons stopped for driving stolen vehicles or vehicles with missing, stolen or altered license plates in areas of prostitution such as Pacific Highway South since 1980.

This list brings to mind the steps the Riverman might take to prevent being identified should the vehicle he is driving be reported while he is looking for or

abducting a victim. It has got to be a major consideration for someone as wary as the Riverman. It is highly unlikely that he pulls up to the curb nearby where an intended victim is standing driving his own car which displays license plates registered to him. So how could he avoid identification through the vehicle he was driving?

I'll discuss this much more thoroughly in my letter on how I think he selects, approaches and abducts his victims. But for now, I'll summarize somewhat by saying that one technique he may use is to park his vehicle in a location that is out of the line of sight of passing cars, pedestrians and occupants of nearby buildings and approach his intended victim on foot. I doubt that this is the only precaution he takes, however. Additional steps he may take if the car he is driving is in fact his, is to remove or alter the plates or to update the legal plates with stolen ones. He may even have purchased a vehicle under an assumed name so that while it is not stolen nor using stolen plates, neither can it be traced to him.

Of course, there is also the possibility the Riverman has stolen a vehicle prior to abducting each one of his victims. I wouldn't put it past him to use a stolen vehicle now and then, but for him to have done so every time he has gone looking for a victim for the past three years is highly unlikely. The risk of being caught stealing or driving a stolen vehicle would be very high when you consider the dozens of vehicles he would have to have stolen and the thousands of miles of cruising he would have to have done in them in high crime areas looking for victims. Keep in mind that the 45 or so official Green River victims represent only a fraction of the total number of times he would have to steal vehicles in the past three years. Not only has he certainly killed more than those 45, but there were times when he went out hunting that he came up empty-handed for one reason or another. Stealing 60, 70, 80, 100, vehicles over a three year period would seem to create an unacceptably high risk of arrest when you consider the steps he could take to conceal the true ownership of his own vehicle.

Since there's a chance he may have used a stolen vehicle once in a while, I propose the following study: compile a list of all vehicles stolen in King and Pierce Counties on the day of and day before each of the disappearances in the Green River case. For Wendy Coffield, for example, vehicles stolen on July 7 and 8, 1982, would be listed. I would want to know make, model, year and where the vehicle was stolen from and where it was found.

It sounds like a fairly major undertaking for an issue of questionable relevancy. It may not be worth it. The data may not even be available.

Finally, I wouldn't say that he has never driven right up to one of his victims as he was making his approach to abduct her (if one of his victims was hitch hiking for instance) but for many reasons I think that such a practice would be an exception to the rule.

10. Mental patient's printout.

I am not enthusiastic about such a listing but I don't want to overlook it. The Healy list of lists included mental patients. While including them won't hurt, doing so should be done with the following qualifications: 1] mental patients show no greater propensity for violent criminal behavior than the general population and 2] I believe it is highly unlikely that the Riverman has suffered or is suffering from the kind of mental disturbance that would bring him to the attention of mental health professionals. There's always a possibility, though, hence the mental patient list.

Why do I believe he doesn't have a recorded history of mental problems? For starters, he has committed between 40 and 60 murders over a three-year period, and he has not been caught and has left very little in the way of clues. This by itself isn't conclusive and must be considered in light of other things. The manner in which he has gone about systematically abducting, asphyxiating, and disposing of his victims is evidence of a highly controlled, quiet, relatively rational individual. He has had to be very well disciplined and conscious of what is going on around him. Furthermore, a certain presence of calm and normality has been essential to him being able to lure and abduct his victims, most of whom were aware of a killer stalking them and looking for anything bizarre or threatening in the men who approached them. And from what I know about the murders, there is a lack of the kind of extremely bizarre acting out (taunting the police, mutilating the victims) that would suggest a severe impairment of mental capacities.

The Riverman has his problems, which sounds like an understatement I suppose, but these distorted mental processes which underlie his violent behavior would appear from the facts and circumstances of the case, to be as well integrated as

they are hidden from view of those around him.

There you have my ten lists. Now, what I would do in addition to this is to develop a duplicate set of lists for Multnomah County [Portland OR]. As I discussed at some length in my letters of January 28 and February 3, the likelihood that the Riverman has been active in the Portland area is so high as to approach certainty. Cross referencing the Oregon and Washington lists could develop an important list – possible suspects with significant contacts in both states.

I hope this has been of some value to you. Please share it with [others] when you have a chance. If you have any questions, don't hesitate to ask. Maybe you could arrange a call to me so we can go beyond the limitations of the written word.

Take care.

Best regards,

ted

PS – When studying a list of unsolved homicides of young women between 1973 and 1983, which was sent to me, I noticed that there are only two cases listed in 1981: one involved a white female named Carter found at Fort Lewis on January 18, 1981 and the other involved a 27 y/o woman named Quaschik found in the Spokane River on April 14, 1981. Did either Carter or Quaschik have a record for prostitution? How comprehensive is this listing for 1981? Does it include all such unsolved cases in Washington, Oregon and British Columbia during that period? I'd like to know because I am trying to get a feeling for when the Riverman began to kill.

PPS – There's a somewhat miscellaneous matter we discussed briefly during your visit that I'd like to make a few additional comments on. You asked me what I thought the significance was of the fact that one of the original Green River victims was found near, but not in, the river unlike the other four victims. Cynthia Hinds was last seen around 7:45pm on July 11, 1982, and Opal Mills was last seen around noon the next day. Because both were young black girls

about the same age, both with records for prostitution, both last seen in the Pacific Highway South area, who disappeared within 24 hours of each other, there is a possibility they were abducted together, although the overwhelming evidence suggests the Riverman abducted his victims one at a time.

The probable sequence was that he abducted Hines on the 11th and disposed of her body in the river under cover of darkness the same day. The next day he returned to abduct Mills. Unknown to him at the time was that on the day he abducted Mills police had discovered the body of Debra Bonner in the river a short distance away from where he'd left Hinds the night before. Not knowing about the discovery of Bonner he returned under cover of darkness to the same place he'd left Hinds the night before. As he was dragging Mills' body on its stomach, feet first toward the river, something panicked him and caused him to bolt before he could place the body in the river.

Could he have noticed police searching the area a short distance away where Bonner's body had just been found? Could there have been additional traffic on the road beside which he parked on that evening which spooked him? Could that traffic have been related to Bonner's discovery? Could there have been police or news media vehicles travelling that road that evening?

Whatever the reason for his untimely departure, he learned shortly thereafter about the discovery of Bonner's body and did not return to complete the job of putting Mills in the river because of the obvious risk, leaving you with a rare, unwaterlogged, fresh body complete with a couple of articles of hair and fiber gathering clothing.

Were people who may have been travelling the road that runs near where Mills was found on the evening of July 12 questioned about any vehicles they may have seen parked along the roadside?

I am sure he immediately recognized what a close call he had, and, in my opinion, didn't come anywhere close to that area of the Green River for months, if ever.

One closing footnote: By placing a large rock over Hinds' body to keep it submerged, the Riverman displayed the extraordinary lengths, revealing [however] inept the use of the of the rock was, he would go to hide his victims.

PPPS – I would appreciate it if you would send me a few stamps. I'm running low on postage, and these letters put a drain on my already meager supply. Thanks.

Bundy letter from Starke, Florida

03-21-1985

Dear [Green River Task Force]:

I wrote you letters on January 28, 1985 [12 pages], and again on February 3, 1985. I wrote to you on February 5, 1985 [16 pages]. I haven't heard from you since I wrote to you. I would like to know if you received those letters, and if you did, did you send me a reply.

I would like to know your reaction to my most recent letter. There is a good deal more I have to send you but I am awaiting word from you before I write again. I would like our correspondence to be as much like a dialogue as possible.

Take care.

Best regards,

ted

PS – please address any future letters to me in the form in the upper right hand corner of this letter. Recent changes in prison regulations require the lengthier address I have written above. Thanks.

Bundy letter from Starke, Florida

04-17-1985

Dear [Task Force]:

I have received and read your letter of March 19, 1985 as well as the enclosed newspaper articles describing the two latest finds in the Green River case. What with the arrival of spring in the NW more of the Riverman's victims should turn up. And based on past behavior, this is the time of year when he should be expected to be more active. So, I imagine that you will be busier than ever.

I realize that you are very busy, as I said, and that the time you have to correspond with me and respond to my letters is quite limited. On the other hand, I hope you can understand that it's hard for me to figure out what to write to you about when I know so little about the current concerns of the Green River investigators. I also realize that I cannot be trusted with confidential information. That's the way it is. No problem.

So I've reached the point where I don't know what else to write to you concerning the Green River murders. I have already expressed most of my ideas on the case. Sure, I could go on hypothesizing but I'm not sure what value it would be. I'd rather not waste your time and mine.

Let me put it this way: if there is anything specific you'd like me to comment on concerning the Green River investigation or any specific questions you have stemming from what I've said or write about the case, please feel free to ask. If I come up with any additional thoughts I think might be of value to you, I will write them down and send them along as I have in the past.

Regarding the comments you made in your

April 25, 1985

I put this letter aside a little over a week ago, hoping for some insight and inspiration. I can't say I came up with anything so I'd better finish off this one as best I can and send it on its way.

Picking up where I left off, regarding your comments made in your March 19 letter about the list of lists used in the Healy et al investigation in 1974, I wouldn't go so far as to say I'm puzzled by the list and the analysis of it. Sure I have some questions about, and I would challenge some of the things you have said about the use of the list. For example, I can see my name appearing on two, maybe three lists, but not on the five you allege. But whether my name is on one or ten lists may not be relevant at this point. I don't want to get in the position of debating this aspect of the 1974 investigation.

The important point as I see it is that people in law enforcement have learned something from the use of the lists, ten years ago, and that today they may use such an investigative tool more effectively because of that experience. As you know, names on lists, is not evidence of the kind that could prove useful in a trial. At best, it's a tool that can bring focus of an investigation on possible suspects. With this in mind, investigators in those 1974 cases cannot be faulted for limiting their investigation of me prior to my arrest in Utah in August, 1975.

There's more to this business of the use of lists in the 1974 cases, and someday we'll have a chance to discuss it in more detail perhaps.

You also mention the incompleteness of your list of murder victims in the Pacific NW in 1981. To the extent that this incompleteness is due to the failure of agencies to report crimes; it is abominable and an unfortunate fact of life in your business. I doubt that even VI-CAP will change that.

But there's more to this problem of incompleteness than the failure of agencies to report. Take the Green River cases for example. These are some 45 known victims and missing persons officially believed to be victims of the Riverman. I think you would agree that it's safe to assume he has killed considerably more than 45 people. He almost certainly killed prior to July 1982 and has continued to kill since December 1983. The obvious problem you encounter in such an investigation is linking cases that differ or vary in location and modus operandi.

Still, this only addresses part of the problem of incompleteness. Even if you were 100% sure you'd included all cases, with known victims, whose remains had been found to a certain perpetrator, there's always a problem in a Green River kind of serial murder case that all the victims are not found and may never be found, and that in all probability there are victims in the Green River case whose remains have not been found and are not even believed to be possible victims.

I'm sure this is frequently on your mind. What you are dealing with in the Green River case is only the tip of the proverbial ice berg. And while it's not especially conjecture to generalize in serial murder cases, I think there is a significant tendency in serial murder cases that a number of the victims of a serial murderer are not found. In the Green River case the percentage is around 30% and probably far higher. Sure there are cases that are exceptions where all the victims in a given murder series are found. But, I think such cases are exceptions.

Well, I've rambled on again. I guess you could say, "So what." What can you do, except keep it in mind? There are any number of possible explanations for the phenomenon of unknown and missing victims in series murders, of bodies disposed of and never found, and if you're interested I could elaborate.

Before I forget to mention it, thanks for the stamps.

Please take note of my new revised address, at the beginning of the letter.

Take care.

Best regards,

ted

Bundy letter from Starke, Florida

09-05-1985

Dear [Task Force]:

It's about time I got off my ass and at least acknowledged receiving your last two letters. These would be your letters of May 29, and August 12. I apologize for the delay. I just find it hard to get motivated these days to write to anyone about anything. Now if I had a word processor, things might be different.

I don't anticipate this being an extensive reply to your letters. I'll write what I can write now and get into the rest some other time.

Your August 12 letter and enclosures focused mainly on developments related to the discovery of remains of two women in the Portland area who were on the Green River missing list. That the Riverman is now conclusively linked to activity in the Portland area shouldn't really surprise anyone, but that the bodies of two women last believed to be in the Seattle area were found near Portland, is...well...a novel twist. You called the discovery of the remains of Bush and Sherill "a dynamic and interesting dimension". That it is. And it is probably by no means the most novel, dynamic and interesting development to be unearthed in the case, considering the fact you're just scratching the surface at this point.

You asked if these new facts would change my mind about the likelihood of the Riverman living in the Tacoma/Puyallup area. No, not really, but I'd better clarify myself on this.

When I received a list of the dead and missing in the Green River case from you last fall, I looked at where the victims were last seen and where their bodies/remains were found and one pattern that occurred to me was a significant number of them were found south of where they were last seen. I think I mentioned it to you when I saw you last year. Some moved farther than others. My intuitive sense of things told me that the Riverman had a tendency to dispose of his victims at some point on his way back to where he'd come from. I could go into this in more detail but this'll do for now.

Admittedly, there are exceptions to this pattern of southerly movement. It's far from a perfect theory. While based on fact, it's still highly speculative. Call it only a tendency.

Something else about the location of the remains interested me. The Riverman seemed to be intent on leaving them in King County. Like I said, it "seemed" that way. This said to me that not only did he live south of the Pacific Highway South [PHS] area, he lived outside of King County. He disposed of the bodies where he did because he didn't want to leave them close to home. So I looked at this and my gut reaction was that between July 1982 and December 1983, the Riverman probably lived in Pierce or maybe Thurston Counties.

The discovery of the remains of Bush and Sherill doesn't change my initial impressions for a number of reasons. To begin with, if the Riverman had lived in Portland during 1982 and 1983 I'd expect to see many more victims' remains scattered between Portland and Seattle. Instead, virtually all the official Green River victims (I emphasize "official" because there are undoubtedly many more victims of this man) were left in King County.

My second reason for thinking the Riverman didn't live in Portland (at least not continuously) during 1982 and 1983 has to do with his level of activity in the Seattle area during that time. He must have spent an enormous amount of time cruising and lurking around the PHS area for example. It would appear that at times he was looking for victims on a daily basis...and you must keep in mind that it's unlikely that every time he went looking he found a suitable victim under suitable circumstances.

Considering all this and the fact he abducted his victims day and night seven days a week, says to me that he wasn't doing all this and commuting the four hours or so it takes to drive from Portland to Seattle too.

I think it's clear now that Bush and Sherill's remains have been discovered that he was active in the Portland area in 1982 and 1983 at least. But from the facts and circumstances I am aware of, extremely limited though they are, the Riverman was making the occasional commute from Washington to Oregon and back rather than vice versa.

(Refer to my earlier letters in the subject of his travels to Portland for more of my reasoning on why he'd do this.)

Okay, so why did he dump Bush's and Sherill's bodies near Portland, assuming he picked them up and abducted them near Seattle?

I sure as hell don't know. I don't even have a good idea. But I'll tell you this much: the Riverman had a very good reason for [taking] them there, even though it is not apparent now. I'm not saying the Riverman understands the reason necessarily. Let me put it this way: as I think I have noted before, the Riverman is not the stereotypical, maniacal, compulsive, mad slasher type. He was (and hopefully still is) a thinking, learning, changing dynamic person. There were variations in his behavior just like there are in yours and mine. He's going to be inconsistent at times. He's not a robot. His mind works much the same as your does. At the same time, he is unique as you are. Think about it.

So while taking Bush and Sherill to Portland made sense to him at the time, you'll never know exactly why until he tells you. The important thing is that an undeniable link has been made revealing the Riverman's presence in the Portland area. He is certainly responsible for the deaths of many more people in NW Oregon than Bush and Sherrill. And as I mentioned in an earlier letter extending your investigation to Portland opens things up. You might say it warms things up.

Well, that's the essence of my response to your August 12 letter. One additional observation for the hell of it though. The newspaper clipping you sent about the discovery of Bush and Sherrill mentioned that the FBI was contemplating becoming involved. Like the FBI could make a difference. I can't imagine anyone around the Task Force is holding their breath waiting for the FBI to come to the rescue. Or if a small handful of FBI agents didn't already have more than enough to do to keep them busy.

It always amazes me how the press and the public think FBI involvement is some kind of panacea, providing some special insight, some resource, some magic to do what local agencies can't accomplish. Such is the FBI myth. Considering the massive resources devoted to the Green River case anything the FBI could contribute would seem to me to be marginal. Besides, too many cooks spoil the broth.

It is all academic anyway since I can't imagine there being any evidence sufficient to establish an interstate crime that would pave the way for the FBI coming in. The irony is they've probably been unofficially involved in one way

or another for some time.

Okay. Now, as to your May 29 letter... In the second paragraph you asked me to get into the business of “where is the Riverman now?” “what’s going through his mind now?” “what’s his behavior like now?” I guess that’s what it comes down to: the Riverman here and now. He’s certainly not the same person today as he was in 82, 83, or 84. But I know of not one shred of fact or circumstance upon which to base any inference or speculation, theory, whatever...as to what he’s like today that would be useful to someone like yourself, who’s looking for him.

I realize that you want to go beyond what you called the “traditional theories”. We discussed some of these last year when you were here. I am sure that the people in the Task Force have formulated more of these theories than they “care to remember”. I’ve thought a lot about some meaningful way to approach this. I have some ideas, but nothing that particularly impresses me. Let me work on it some more and devote a separate letter to it.

I am going to pass on discussing for the time being my thoughts on victims in serial murder cases that, who either before or after their murders, were simply listed as missing, if listed at all, and whose bodies may never be found and identified. Both theory and fact demonstrate that a significant number of murder victims fall into this category. Your experience with the Green River case alone should bear this out.

It is a somewhat lengthy premise that requires more time than I have now. In turn, it is a part of a larger discussion through which I conclude that there could easily be 500 active serial murderers in the US today. (current official estimate of 35 or even 100 is distressingly low).

What I have to say is not of much relevance to the Green River case, anyway, and is best left to another time. Ultimately, however, law enforcement people and social scientists are going to have to develop better ways of studying and tracking missing persons. For all the talk about missing persons these days, the data is shockingly poor, contradictory and unreliable.

I have an idea how I’d study missing person records in order to grasp the real number who are likely victims of “foul play.” A proper review of missing persons files of agencies in the Pacific Northwest would I believe be revealing and could in some instances alert authorities to patterns of what might be called

“silent serial murder.”

In your letter of May 29 you asked about my current status following the decision by the Florida Supreme Court in the Leach case. The legal battles now go into the federal courts. There is no timetable as such. I have many options however, and I plan to fully exercise them all. It's fair to say you'll have ample advance notice in the event the folks here in Florida set a specific date to murder me.

I suggested this once before but you never let me know what you thought of it, so I'll propose it again. I think it would prove useful if we talked on the phone now and then. Writing is fine as far as it goes but it can't provide the subtle and spontaneous give and take a conversation can. Of course, there are problems with confidentiality. Don't hesitate to call if you think it might be of some value.

The best way for me to share my thoughts is if you're in the area again someday and you could come see me. I'd welcome the opportunity.

Have you given any more thought to my idea of a serial murder movie festival? I know it sounds outrageous but I'm telling you, you'd have them coming out of the woodwork. I have written to you in detail about it although we discussed it briefly. Maybe I didn't make myself clear. It's an idea whose time has come. Talk about a proactive technique. I don't see how you can't afford not to use such a novel approach, especially considering how old and cold most of the tips and leads in the investigation have become. You can't be worried about starting a controversy in the community. Not at this point. Besides it can be defused.

People interested in fishing and skiing for example go to see movies about fishing and skiing. People who kill serially go to see movies about serial killing. It's that simple.

Would be a waste of time for me to go into the details?

I've got to go. Take care.

Best Regards, ted

Bundy letter from Starke, Florida

03-04-1986

Dear [Investigator, Green River Task Force]:

Thank you for your letter of February 13, 1986 and the clippings you enclosed with it. The Green River murder investigation has taken on mythical proportions. We're talking about 56 investigators, including 10 FBI persons, two million dollars in computer stuff, the recent find of a two year old pile of bones, and a wise old head named [name redacted]. It's certainly more than I'm capable of comprehending. All the Task Force needs is an acupuncturist and a nutritionist and it could go on tour. Seriously, I wonder if it is too big for its own good.

I've read the positive predictions about 1986 being the year the Riverman is caught, etc, etc. Putting on a confident face is one thing, but if your man is out there watching all this he has a pretty good idea if the investigation is on track or just spinning its wheels.

I heard that a few weeks ago there was a rather sensational search of a potential suspect house, complete with live televised accounts. If it did happen that way, it would be most unfortunate in my opinion. I'd sure like to know what it was that convinced the Task Force to go after someone like that. Has he been cleared or is he still a suspect of some kind. I intended to write to you way last year about my thoughts on [name redacted], but there were other things I wanted to write to you about which took precedence. In any event, I believe I expressed to when you were here, that [name redacted] didn't seem to fit the bill. Just my gut reaction, mind you. I understand that you cannot afford to take anything for granted.

The impression that I was forming of the Riverman back in November 1984 and which has continued to take shape, was that the Riverman wasn't out to play games with you. He wasn't going to tease you or play games with you or leave Lincoln Continentals laying around for you. He wasn't going to get in your face because, believe it or not, he didn't and doesn't want to get caught.

I'm not saying [a person] never thought of taking some young girl off, and doing away with her, but [a person] doesn't seem to me like the type who's crossed

over the line to actually do it, certainly not with the intensity and proficiency with which the Riverman has done it. Just because [a person] contacts the police doesn't mean any more than a longstanding fascination with such things.

You asked about my suggestion of talking by phone. Since I made the suggestion I've thought more about it. We wouldn't have much time; maybe only half an hour or so. But, if something comes you'd like to discuss by phone, call the superintendent and he'll make the necessary arrangements if they can be made.

I won't press you anymore to hold a serial murder movie festival. It's obviously up to you. I think you're missing something though. You don't have many proactive tactics available to you at this stage. It's time to take a few risks, calculated risks, and really what are you risking? This doesn't violate anyone's rights any more than any suspect's rights are violated in the course of an investigation. Where there's a will, there's a way, multiple scene movie theaters notwithstanding! Let me quote you something from the August 1985 FBI Bulletin which reported findings of a study on serial murders: "Their (the 36 subjects studied) visual interests (pornography, fetishism, and voyeurism) reinforced the sex and aggression (pg 5)". For the serial murderer, one form of voyeurism is watching a movie of someone committing serial murder.

So much for my words of wisdom about the Green River case. With all the folks now on the Task Force I am sure there's no lack of ideas.

Perhaps I can be of more value in commenting on your project to centralize data about homicides in Washington State. What comes to mind first is the question of whether or not you and the Office of the Attorney General have the legal authority to compel local agencies to supply such information. Secondly, if you have the legal authority, do you have the funds and the administrative apparatus to effectively do the job.

Sure, I can see the value of having data on all unsolved and solved homicides on one computer so that summaries of the data can be distributed around the state. It'll be a massive undertaking. Every law enforcement agency around the state without exception will have to search their records back 10, 20 years. (How far back to you want to go is the basic question.)

So let's say this can be done. What are you going to produce?

Last year, you sent me a couple lists of unsolved homicides, which though

interesting, are more noteworthy for their shortcomings. They're examples of what not to do. For example, you sent me one list which appears to contain homicides occurring between 1973 and 1983. Who defined what homicides were placed on the list? Who compiled it? What area does it cover? The list is clearly incomplete. Why? What's its purpose?

The 1973-1983 list may be someone's personal working list. It appears to contain only the unsolved cases of young women in Western Washington, although Spokane homicides have been included. What your data base would do, would be assure the reader that the list was thorough and credible. You would also be able to provide them with a uniform format and a better selection of information about each crime.

The problem with uniformity is one I noticed when reviewing the various lists of alleged Green River victims. It's also evident in another list you sent me which appears to cover unsolved homicides and disappearances of young women in California, Oregon, Washington and British Columbia between 1969 and 1975. Again, it's hard to say what the purpose of the list is. It is obviously very incomplete. Who is responsible for the list? What were its sources? There are for instance, several missing persons on the list. Are there all the young women missing under mysterious circumstances in those jurisdictions between 1969 and 1975? And so on.

The point is that a uniform statewide system of reporting could take the guesswork out of such a list.

One idea before I forget: somehow your data bank should make provision for people missing under suspicious circumstances. It will probably have to be a fairly, well-defined, criteria for what a "suspicious" disappearance is. As you know, many murder victims, especially serial murder victims, are often listed as missing before it's known that they're murder victims, the Green River case being a good example. If your computer system is going to attempt to identify a pattern of serial murder, among other things, it should be capable of making connections between actual murder victims and missing persons.

I've gone over the State of Oregon Homicide Report you sent me a couple of times. It's about as thorough a report as I can imagine. I have only one suggestion. The category of "Activity When Last Seen" could be reworked. Currently the activity category mixes activities and places. Places last seen and

activity when last seen should probably be separate and analyzed closely in conjunction with the MO section.

The place and activity categories are important for reasons other than those of linking similar cases and searching for witnesses. They are important because they can also yield insight into MO. How in fact could the victim have been abducted under these conditions?

Summarizing these reports in some meaningful way so that investigators can more efficiently scan a listing of unsolved homicides is going to be a challenge. I'd supply the following information:

1. Sex, age, race, height, weight and name of victim
2. Cause of death
3. Condition of body (clothed, nude, mutilated, decomposed, etc.)
4. Date found
5. Location where found
6. Type of location (river, beside road, abandoned house, in bushes, buried, in water, etc.)
7. Date missing
8. Last known location and activity before disappearance, death
9. Investigating agency.

You get the picture. I can see where it'd take a lot of work to put the information into a form that is readable, neat.

Having access to all this kind of information and being able to link cases are two different things, of course. All this data is only as good as the person interpreting it, and there are a number of factors which inhibit an investigator from officially linking a case in his jurisdiction to a series murder investigation somewhere else, as you have seen in the Green River case. And there are going to be times when (no matter how skilled the analyst) cases won't be linked which were committed

by the same individual, because of what appear to be distinguishing characteristics. If a perpetrator consciously or unconsciously varies some critical variable, then the entire premise of consistency and similarity is confounded. A lot of data doesn't make one clairvoyant under such conditions. The serial murderer who is thoughtful enough to leave police a truly unique "signature" is definitely the exception to the rule.

One last thing. It occurred to me when I was thinking about the Devine girl earlier, I worked in Olympia for a few months in 1973 and again during the summer of '74. I became quite familiar with the area around Olympia, the rural areas, backroads, dirt roads, places where people illegally dumped refuse. Anyway, in 1974 while I was checking out the off-the-road locations, I found what appeared to be human skeletal remains in two separate places. I wasn't sure though. I forgot all about it until a while ago. I never had occasion to mention it really.

I'm almost certain there'd be nothing left there but if you want to send me a detailed map of the Lacy area I'll try to pinpoint the location as best as I can. I'd also appreciate it if you could send me some of the crime scene photos in the Devine case, including a couple that show her face. The ones I saw didn't show her face.

Thanks.

Take care.

Best regards,

ted

PS-Even as crude as that list sent me covering the period of 1973 to 1983 is, it reveals a couple of interesting patterns: the three women strangled in their homes in the Kent-Bellevue area in 1980; the four women found strangled in Snohomish County between 1980-1983; the five found strangled to death in the Spokane River. I'm sure there are more patterns but I have a feeling the list isn't complete. There's isn't enough information either.

Do you have a more complete list of unsolved murders in Washington and

Oregon between 1980 and 1985? And finally, how about this proposal: how about you and I sitting together and going over all the unsolved homicides in Washington in the past 10 years or so and seeing what cases we could link? I guarantee you it would be worth your while. I'm very serious. I'll be disappointed if you don't take me up on this offer at your earliest opportunity. Let me know.

Bundy letter from Starke, Florida

08-03-1986

Dear [Investigator Green River Task Force]:

I received your letter of June 5, 1986 at a time when there was a death warrant pending against me, as you know. I felt then that it would be best delay answering until calmer conditions prevailed.

Considering your last letter and what has transpired between us since we met in November 1984, I don't see any benefit from us continuing to write to each other.

When I first contacted the Green River Task Force in 1984 I was disappointed when I was informed that you had been assigned to my liaison with the Task Force. I had no animosity toward you, but I knew that you had been an investigator in certain cases where I was a suspect. I felt that these unsolved cases would naturally tend to preoccupy you and perhaps detract somewhat from what I had to say about Green River. I won't say that you didn't give full consideration to my comments and observation, but I never felt that we established a dialogue in the Green River case. There could have been a number of reasons for this, but I think this was in part due to your continuing concern about these other cases.

In your letters you constantly referred to, or inferred, about the cases in the mid-70s. I don't blame you. However, I made it very clear in my initial letter to the Task Force that I was in no way interested in discussing these cases. I meant it. I wasn't playing games with you. This initiative on my part was not and is not some subtle or subconscious way of easing into a discussion about the mid-70s cases or any other cases except Green River.

What your last letter indicated to me is that we really have nowhere to go. I was very surprised that you would bring such a proposal to me. My offers to help first with the Task Force and then your state-wide, unsolved homicides project were genuine and explicit. I did not appreciate your attempt to crudely manipulate me by questioning the sincerity and value of my efforts. I know I

should have expected this, but I didn't expect that you would so badly misread me.

I am not going to play games and I don't want you to feel that you have to play games with me. The only way I can see for us to avoid such an unproductive involvement is for us to stop communicating. We both have better uses for our time.

I wish you the best in your work on the Task Force, with the AG office and in your life generally.

Peace,

ted

Bundy letter from Starke, Florida

12-23-1986

Dear [Investigator Green River Task Force]:

Thank you for your letter of November 12.

You didn't need to apologize for not writing. I wasn't expecting to hear from you in light of my letter to you of August 3, 1986. In fact, you didn't even mention my August 3 letter. Anyway, I was surprised to hear from you again.

I am not adverse to us starting out fresh and reviewing the deaths of the black prostitutes in Spokane, the murder of the two 12 year-olds in Tacoma and the two suspects in Kitsap County that you mentioned in your letter, along with other unsolved homicides since 1976 in Washington State. But we need to have an express understanding that you will not use such discussions or opportunity to press and probe and proposition me about cases where I am a suspect.

So, either we are going to take a look at some of these unsolved homicides that have occurred in the past ten years or we aren't. Let's not talk about doing it. Since I can't just get to Seattle right now, the only way we can effectively do this is for you to come here. It is up to you.

If we to go forward, we will need some kind of agenda or outline to work from.

Take care.

peace,

ted

PS – I hope things are going well for you and your Christmas holidays are joyous.

Bundy letter from Starke, Florida

01-17-1987

Dear [Investigator Green River Task Force]:

Thank you for your letter of January 14 and the newspaper clippings you enclosed regarding the murders in British Columbia. I am looking forward to our meeting on February 27. I hope you will be able to make it on that date. I am aware of how busy you are and how things can come up. As for me, February 27 is fine. It will not interfere with my "appellate business" since I have left the handling of my appeals entirely to my attorneys.

The topics you suggested we discuss are fine. In addition, if you still want to talk about those points you mentioned in your November 21, 1986 letter, which are related to your PhD work, we can do that too. I am not sure what you have in mind when you say you are doing an "analysis of the issues brought on appeal as they relate to solvability factors in serial murder cases." Would you mind briefly elaborating on this so I can give it some thought prior to our meeting. We can also discuss matters relating to eyewitnesses, hypnosis, interviewing suspects and searching for physical evidence.

In your November 21 letter you also mentioned something you referred to as "extrinsic offenses". I think I know what you were referring to, but I am not sure by "extrinsic offenses" do you mean those crimes which investigators think are linked to a series of crimes but are in fact not linked, i.e. committed by a different offender?

This is certainly a relevant consideration to be kept in mind as authorities attempt to determine what, if any, connection recent murders of young women in BC have to the Green River case. Two years ago when we first talked about the Green River case I felt there was a good possibility that the Green River killer had ranged from Vancouver, BC to Portland in his search for victims. Since that time evidence has been found to place the Riverman in Portland. If I remember correctly, Vancouver BC is even closer to Seattle than Portland. Being quite familiar with the Vancouver area myself, I can see how the Riverman could easily have been drawn there.

If there is any change in your plans, please let me know. And write me when you have a chance to let me know what you mean by “solvability factors”. Thanks.

I hope all is going well for you.

Peace,

ted

Bundy letter from Starke, Florida

02-16-1987

Dear [Investigator Green River Task Force]:

I must ask that we postpone our meeting scheduled for February 27. Circumstances are such that it should be postponed indefinitely. I hope that this change of plans does not inconvenience you. It will, at least, save the state some money and give you a couple of days that I am sure you will have no trouble filling with other activities.

One of the reasons that I feel the need to cancel our meeting involves the possibility that a visit by my Washington DC attorneys will conflict with our meeting. My attorneys will be in Atlanta on February 25 for an oral argument in one of my cases before the 9th circuit Court of Appeals. They indicated that they have tentatively planned to come see me following oral arguments. It would be a mess if you and my attorneys showed up on the same day. I wouldn't want you to come all the way across the country and risk encountering my attorneys, who, if they I planned to meet with you, would insist that I not do so.

I am sorry about this. I realize that you are very busy. You can hardly be expected to organize and reorganize your schedule around the last minute plans of my attorneys. As things stand now, I feel it is best if we just put our plans for a meeting on ice indefinitely.

I hope things are going very well for you.

Peace,

ted

PS – Thank you for your January 28 letter and for explaining in it what you mean by “solvability factors.”

Bundy letter from Starke, Florida

07-06-1987

Dear [Investigator Green River Task Force]:

I apologize for not writing promptly to answer your February 23 and May 22 letters. Today, I received your July 2 letter. Thank you for your letters and your patience. I have all three letters in front of me. I will go over them now.

Your February 23 letter:

Because of some misinformation in the press a couple months ago, which falsely stated I had been studied by the FBI, my attorneys became aware that I had in fact been in contact with Bill Hagmaier. They were not previously aware of this and were not pleased. They gave me a direct order not to communicate with people in law enforcement. That is their job and for the time being, I will have to honor their instructions on this.

Given the situation, I do not know when we will be able to meet again. I am confident that someday we will be able to. You asked if I had any ideas on lists of names that could be used to develop suspects. I have nothing further to add to what I wrote to you on the subject in several earlier letters. I know so very little about what's really happening in the case/investigation that anything I would say would be elementary. I will say this much: looking for names of persons, whose names show up in lists developed in the key metropolitan areas (Portland, Tacoma, Seattle and Vancouver, BC) has a lot of potential. Wait...I don't think I worded that clearly but you get the idea. The more areas where a given person's name turns up, the higher his suspect status.

Your May 22 letter:

You briefly discussed [redacted] and enclosed a news clipping about statements

he is making. What [redacted] is saying around the country is so patently and outrageously preposterous that anyone who knows about serial murder and/or my background will quickly identify [name redacted] as a charlatan. Of course, most people do not understand the nature of serial murder and do not know me, and this is true of people in local law enforcement who attend seminars and conferences only to be misled by [some] who are tragically uninformed about the problem.

I genuinely wanted to make a contribution notwithstanding the limitations I had to remain cognizant of.

You know how your last meeting with me went. I didn't discuss my background or the allegations about me, not so much as a single case, not in the first, second or third person, not directly or indirectly. During that meeting and in subsequent correspondence it became clear that [redacted] did not have the kind of capabilities needed to make use of my knowledge. That about does it for [this topic], except to say that I, too, hope to find a proper forum for the truth, although I know this will not be easy since it is my experience that the system and the people who operate it are not primarily interested in the truth and may even be adverse to it.

Your July 2 letter:

You mentioned the discovery of the remains of Cindy Anne Smith. You said Smith disappeared about the time police located the remains of an unidentified victim not far away and that Smith was found ½ mile from Antosh.

You wondered if I thought those coincidences were/are significant. I rather doubt that the Riverman drove by the discovery site and then boldly went off to abduct Smith (Besides the information I have shows that the unidentified victim was found March 21, 1984 not March 24). But who knows? Only the man himself.

The fact that the Antosh and Smith dump sites were close together could mean the same person did both murders, or that Smith's murderer was a copycat. Antosh was discovered October 16, 1983 and no doubt the discovery was well publicized. The fact that Smith wasn't closer to the Antosh site may only mean the copycat didn't know exactly where Antosh had been dumped. Again, there's no way to say for sure if it was the Riverman or someone else.

With the discovery of remains of victims, like Smith's, the Green River murders

continue to haunt the Pacific Northwest and yet the investigation must be about as cold as a murder investigation can get. I can only see one way that that case can be satisfactorily resolved, and that seems highly unlikely: the man will have to be convinced to give himself up.

I don't have much time. I have one more matter I've been wanting to write about. I saw a news item in the April 25, 1987 edition of the St Pete Times about a Morris Solomon, who was arrested in Sacramento for the murder of six prostitutes, some or all of whom were buried on his property. You must certainly have checked him out long ago, especially since he had a history of violence against women, including his 1977 acquittal for the murder of a prostitute. The man was loose on the West coast for the better part of the next 10 years after his 1977 murder trial. He may have been cleared in the Green River case, but he represents one kind of individual who is in the Green River ballpark. There are undoubtedly more Morris Solomon types out there. With their criminal records, I am sure those you can identify are at the top of your list. Then there are all the ones without the criminal records....

I wish you the best.

Peace,

ted

** This may be impossible for several reasons, but I wonder if the Task Force has seriously considered what it would take to do this.

Bundy letter from Starke, Florida

02-11-1988

Dear [Investigator Green River Task Force]:

Thank you for your letter of February 2. You said you plan to be in Jacksonville the week of February 22. I am interested in meeting with you while you are in the area. You said you could come by the 22nd, 23rd, or both. How about the 22nd? I may have an attorney interview the 23rd. The best time would be after 11am. I only get two periods of outdoor exercise a week and one of them is 8-10 Monday mornings. I would suggest asking the prison to schedule you from 11am to 5pm. That way we'll have the time if we need it and if we don't we don't. It is up to you.

As to what we can discuss, the Homicide Assistance Program questionnaire would be one good topic. It is so very thorough however, that I am not sure what I can add.

You said we could also talk about the information in my July 6, 1987 letter. I don't recall the letter, although I do remember writing in one of my last letters to you, as you noted, something about the Riverman turning himself in. I must say that it is highly unlikely he would do so, but at this point in the investigation there's no point in not turning over all the stones. Nothing ventured, nothing gained. I have no doubt that you and many in the Task Force have contemplated a scenario or two designed to prompt the man to give himself up. And, I'll bet that conventional law enforcement (not to mention political) considerations find such tactics objectionable to one degree or another for one reason or another. The hope that good old (and new) investigative practices will identify this guy springs eternal. Maybe this year...

I would be interested in going over with you any of the cases you mentioned in our November 21, 1986 letter plus any of the unsolved cases in the Pacific Northwest since 1982 which may be related to King County Green River cases. Actually, I don't know what you'll feel comfortable bringing. Bring as much as you want, but nothing prior to 1976 please. I won't discuss anything prior to 1976. Do we understand each other on this?

Please let me know what you can do and when you can come.

Take care.

Peace,

ted

Conversations with Ted Bundy: Prison Interviews

The following interviews with Ted were provided to me via a Freedom of Information Act request [FOIA] in June of 2015. What is revealed in these conversations with Ted is his intellectual and analytical capability, his ability to manipulate, and also, his ability to contribute articulately and I believe, truthfully, to the understanding of persons who are prone to commit serial murder. As long as he was analyzing serial offenses in a broad manner, he seemed comfortable and able to articulate what he believed were key points about serial killer thinking and behavior. It is only when directly confronted that he becomes agitated or begins to hedge his responses. Or, so it seems to me. His conversations, along with his letters, also show his sense of humor and his ability to manipulate others by a charming exterior even while talking of things most people cannot even comprehend.

In researching information on the internet, it seems that not all serial murderers are driven by the need to sexually assault and possess their victims. Ted stated many times, both in letters and in conversations, as well as to people who knew him and talked with him after he was caught, that his “sickness” (as he referred to it) was not the result of any one causative factor; but rather, was an evolution that resulted from many influences, including a trigger caused by the visual impact of some forms of pornography. He stated behind the scenes that he felt the FBI and investigators were discounting what he said about the triggers of pornography on susceptible minds.

Ted was not who he seemed to be on the surface when he was “normal”, and when the mask was in place it was difficult to ascertain just how terrifying the dark side of Ted Bundy really was. Those who knew him and those who investigated him should not be faulted for their confusion and difficulty in putting all the pieces together. Only Ted knew how the various components of his personality all fit together with what evil deeds he did as a result and he held that secret to the end of his life. He was kind to some people, while terrorizing his victims. It was as if two different people inhabited the same body at times. The tendency to suppress one side over the other is easier to see when the broader spectrum of his interviews and comments are reviewed against what is known of his killings.

As an example, Ted feigned amnesia when asked specifically about two of his victims in Utah, claiming not to remember details of their death when he was questioned just hours before his execution. But behind the scenes, back in 1984, he alluded to details in a conversation with authorities that suggests his “amnesia” about the Utah victims was not honest. He specifically asked a question about an unusual method of blood loss and such an unusual blood loss was found in the autopsies of those two victims. He also stated to authorities early on in his conversations that serial killers are prone to rewrite their own history and that they do not get amnesia for the offenses they commit: they instead have a very deep seated denial and protective mechanism that allows them to separate themselves from that part of their personality that commits the atrocities. They feign amnesia for some aspects of their crimes in order to hold their secrets.

There is much that Ted Bundy attempted to tell authorities back then about the serial offender mind and reasons for, and methods of, behavior. Much of his writings and his input into Green River cases was never published in its totality. Some of it was positioned out of context in the manner it was originally presented.

The conversations in prison with Ted Bundy were given to me in their original audio recorded form. I had to transcribe them. I am not a professional transcriptionist and so I had to go back and listen to some parts multiple times. The first series of conversations with Ted Bundy were done in Florida State prison with Robert Keppel and Dave Reichert in November of 1984. Some of these conversations I have edited as certain people are discussed which are not relevant to the Green River murder investigation. Other sections are edited as they are detailed with specific case information which I had to try and transcribe without the benefit of understanding the names, places and dates they were talking about. When a victim is named and I cannot understand who they are talking about as it isn't clear, I chose to just put “victim” in brackets to avoid any spelling errors and I have tried to focus on only those passages during the two days that the men talked about Ted's impressions of the Green River killer that provide Ted's insights into the killer's behavior, needs, victim selections and modus operandi. The most important element of the 1984 interview to me isn't the exact detail of what is being discussed so much as the overall impression, the cumulative impact.

As a victim of that time period who was overlooked, traumatized, and then

suppressed years later in trying to come forward, I find the fact that the totality of all communications with Bundy were never represented accurately to the public and that his cases were closed as “unsolvable” or not worked as “we’ll never know” bewildering. In my opinion, none of this information should have ever been released until all missing girls were found and all cases solved. There needs to be both protective measures against release and protective measures for transparency to help victims like me who were severely traumatized and suffering from memory fragmentation and delayed PTSD. Verifying memory pieces is very important to healing and closure – at least it was for me.

It is my hope in releasing these interviews and letters in this volume that questions are asked of procedures back then and policies are implemented today which prevent disclosures of information in cases where serial offenders are caught but not all cases are solved and not all victims are known. To me, it’s not necessary until all is known. Victims can survive a serial killer - I did, though I suffered memory problems and injuries that were not readily apparent to others. I am sure that others have survived such circumstances as well. It was difficult for me to be heard by law enforcement because so much information had been released over the years that it took much of what I had to say as a survivor away from me in terms of details. It made me feel helpless and captive by the very justice system that is supposed to help victims because I had to struggle so hard to get someone to believe me. That alone should allow for policies which prevent it from happening again.

Interview: Florida Prison with Ted Bundy, Dave Reichert and Robert Keppel

Date: 11/17/1984 Time: 15:34 hours Tape 1/Side A

Note: I do not know how to distinguish the voices as to who is Dave R and who is Robert K, so I have just transcribed the conversation as "Investigator" and Ted Bundy. Sometimes, it will be obvious which investigator is talking as he names himself or the other one present, but I still left it as simply investigator.

Investigator:

One of the reasons that peaked my interest was at least in the one letter that I read was some of your notes about dump sites. In the past it's been my interest to look at all the dump sites and try to figure out the importance and obviously, you may have some special knowledge that you think may assist us in that area. Maybe I better tell you something about the dump sites that we have.

So, we have a major dump site at the Green River, then along the Star Lake Road, we have five more, or is it six...there's five. In this area, I think all of them are within a hundred feet of the road or less and none are any further than that. It doesn't take any great task to get into the woods and by the time we find these bodies there's blackberry bushes growing over and there may be as many as two different growths through the bones. The other two major areas that we have near the airport, the north end of the airport, in an area where all houses have been taken out because of all the airport noise, overgrown with blackberry bushes and a lot of high grass. We have another one that was found in some blackberry bushes. We now have three bodies that are out east of Enumclaw... near Highway 14.

Ted Bundy:

I'm not surprised...you'll probably find more out there.

Investigator:

Right, right. That was the latest one we just found was actually between these two ...one's about 7 miles east of Enumclaw and the other one's about 14 miles and the other's between there. Just found...

Ted Bundy:

Which one?

Investigator:

Not even on there. We just found it Thursday.

Ted Bundy:

Oh, okay.

Investigator:

Now, along I-90 exit 38 which is east of North Bend, 8 to 9 miles, is where the old highway took off, and the freeway goes through and there's an exit there....the army uses that as a "piss point" or breaks or whatever going from Fort Lewis to Yakima and there was one on the south side of that turnout and one on the north side of the turnout and then further towards Seattle where 18 and I-90 break curiously enough about just maybe half a mile north of where Old Taylor Mountain sites were there's a road called Karistan Road and it goes back in and we found one body in there and then we found one in the intersection of highway 19 and I-90. Now, we also have, as you might expect, this is a pretty restrictive list, and we are pretty much concerned with everybody that appears

on this list during the time period prior to that since 1976 right on the Karistan Road, not as far in as [a victim] was dumped was another prostitute, this one was black. So basically, it's not too far off the road and we have conducted some searching and it looks like, from the looks of it, that we are going to find more. We've been real good in our predictions about who's a victim. Before the Task Force was formed we had about ten, they had ten on the list and out of those ten, they had and now there's fifteen missing and, we have research studies going on it. We have two detectives exclusively devoted to looking at the missing persons in 1984, which is quite unusual as they are a missing juvenile problem and you know the problems that exist ...

Ted Bundy:

The guy's figured it out by now. He's figured it out.

Investigator:

Oh, he's way ahead of us. He's so far ahead of us it's unreal. Let me tell you too, that there are other deaths that have happened recently. One dumpsite is just inside Pierce County where we have a road where the military uses it a little further east, and then there's another dumpsite and possibly in a related case in the Chehalis River and that's as much in June of 84 and then there's one in June of 83 in the Nisqually River and its not on this list but she's a prostitute... .. Recently, in Portland there is a very similar case where a black prostitute was dumped in the woods nude and very fresh, actually covered with debris like some of ours had been. Other than that, that's about all I can tell you about some of the dump sites.

Ted Bundy:

Just describing them is monumental in and of itself.

Investigator:

Are you familiar at all with the Kent Valley area, having grown up in Washington?

Ted Bundy:

I remember the area. That's a low land you know. I used to work in an office that was out of a private...South Center Mall. I have a general familiarity with this area but ...

Investigator:

I was just wondering if you could draw some kind of picture from your mind to give us a clearer picture of what this area looks like.. Star Lake Road, I don't know if you're familiar with what this area looks like or if you're aware of where that's actually located or not...by Federal Way...

Ted Bundy:

I've driven that piece of highway probably a thousand times. At 272nd, do they have an off-ramp, on-ramp to interstate 5?

Investigator:

Not when ... no it does not.

Ted Bundy:

I know that area like the back of my hand.

Investigator:

Crystal Mountain. So you know what that terrain's like out there.

Ted Bundy:

Yeah, well...like, first of all let me say that I have a lot of preconceptions just based upon nothing....based on feelings...intuition. Reshaped feelings looking at when your victims disappeared, when they were found, where they were found...it's kind of fascinating watching all of this unfold, assuming they're all related and I'd say there's a good chance, I mean, obviously there is...they're closely related. And so I sat down and I started taking some notes. [chuckles] And I don't know where to start. I guess what confounds me is the fact that even though, as you correctly pointed out, you're dealing with a class of victims who are hard to trace and hard to investigate ...who disappear without being reported, whose movements are hard to trace, whose friends are difficult to run down, it's still quite significant to me that after [victim] drops off like a deer nobody has turned up yet.. and I'm not saying he's stopped, there's no guaranteeing he's stopped...but he's gotten a lot smarter somehow...something has changed around October of 83...he may not have moved, he may not have been struck by lightning...

Investigator:

Do you think it's possible that this guy could stop?

Ted Bundy:

Well, not... unless he was born again [laughs]...and he got filled with the Holy Spirit...in a very real way [laughs]...He's either moved, or he's dead, or he's either doing something very different. And my feeling is...I don't know... he could be, there's no question in my mind but if he's straightened up, changed his

victim class just a little, dealing with runaways generally, than prostitutes specifically, broadened out a little more just to be able to deal with runaways and delinquents, but more carefully dispose of the bodies that there's no question that this would explain the apparent drop off...but I'm not saying...even here, that I plotted it every way I could...days of the week, frequency of the month...and uh any intense periods...and times more intense than others...I guess...and you were still finding people while he was still active. For instance, he appears, but there's no guarantee, that he began in July of 82...and you've gone over this a thousand times so forgive me if I'm boring you...but there's a good chance that this is not his number one victim. [This victim's] fascinating. That's an anomaly there...geographic area.

Investigator:

Why?

Ted Bundy:

Because she's from Tacoma...she was last seen in Tacoma. She may have migrated up to Pacific Highway South, who knows?...you guys may know more about this than I do, but it's a little bit odd that [victim] is number one on this particular list, but if in fact, and that's a big "if", she disappeared on the 7th, and the 7th was in downtown Seattle and her body is found up here by North Bend, by I-90, less than 24 hours later this guy has dumped...he's traveled ...he's dumped this body here and then the next day he goes down to Tacoma and drops her off in a river...there's something ...and their age differences kind of startled me...[this victim] being 36 and [this victim] being sixteen. That's a little bit weird. All that running around in a 24 hour period more or less. I don't know how much confidence you can place in these dates...probably not a great deal...but they're all you've got to work with...

Investigator:

Well, actually in these crimes the dates are more aligned...Until you get down to

some of them because some witnesses could barely remember the day of the week it was because they were disoriented and we'd talk to them about the day of the month because it's not like they reported it immediately. We do have some that were reported immediately by their families as they reported to their families so we know they're gone.

Investigator:

You said something that interested me and you said there was the difference in age...One 36 and the other 16...why is that?

Ted Bundy:

What's this guy got going in his head...I mean...what's he looking for? I mean, it's hard to say. You have some variation here with most victims...black victims, mostly white and most of them are ages 16 to 20 ... [the one victim] may have looked younger. I don't know ... it's just the age and the geographic differences and the closeness in the time and the difference in where he dumped them...why would he dump one up in the mountains and the other one in the Green River the next day? I mean, you can ask that question of him if you ever find him. But it seems to me...not necessarily that it illuminates [victim]... you know that [this other victim] is a part of it as all the other people were found here...but [this older victim] up here and you'll notice all these ... where did [still another victim] disappear? Downtown Seattle right?

Investigator:

Right.

Ted Bundy:

You'll notice it's all these Seattle victims up here....as opposed to these down

here, in fact most of these down here, in fact, all of these in here are Pacific Highway South victims except number 18...In fact, he took all his Seattle victims either west or south...whereas his Pacific Highway South victims are right in here.

Investigator:

Is number 18 on the list you have?

Ted Bundy:

[Victim], black girl, downtown. Now she very well could have hopped a bus and been down on Pacific Highway South...she disappeared from Seattle yet she is an anomaly because her body is the only body from these four major dumpsites that did not disappear from Pacific Highway South and that general area...all the others went west or south or southwest....way away. That's what I noticed...all these, these girls up here in Seattle, all these, I bet your bones in 25 and 15 will probably turn out to be Seattle victims. For some reason, he is running off Seattle victims in a much different way than he is running off his South victims...

Interruption to change out Ted Bundy's cuffs...

Investigator:

Do you have any speculation as to why he may be doing that?

Ted Bundy:

Well, first of all, there's no good place...he's trying to dispose of bodies where

they won't be found. This guy doesn't want to get caught. I think he doesn't want these bodies found. I think it's clear that over time, at least it would appear, over time he's trying to improve his dumpsites...and he's trying to get better at disposing of bodies, generally speaking. Now, we can all say, he's really clumsy, I would have done it this way, but who knows, under his mental apparatus, what he thinks is effective and what isn't...But I think as far as the downtown Seattle approach, there's obviously no place close by to dump them...Pacific Highway South he's got all this stuff within driving distance and I think it appears to me...my guess would be...that they're dying shortly after he picks them up. He's not going far with them. I'm making a real off the cuff guess.

Investigator:

One of the things I'd take a guess to is that almost all of them are exclusively car date prostitutes... they're not the type that had a motel room or take somebody back to your home...they sell themselves at the car...

Ted Bundy:

Sure...I was going to ask what they were doing...were they plying their trade on the streets or inside establishments...were they standing on the street...

Investigator:

Standing on the street...

Ted Bundy:

He's not taking them in the car. He's not picking them up...it's hard to say. It's all speculation. I'm sure you've gone over this a thousand times...but as far as downtown Seattle, there's obviously no good close site...where he can just drop them off so he's got to go somewhere so he gets on Interstate 5 and he's driving

down 5 and he could just as easily drop off here as he did with [victim] but it's just as likely he heads south and drops off [one] here and [two victims] here and east on 90 and dropped off [victim] here and [victim] here...and also the other two victims, 25 and 16 in that same general vicinity. And of course, Snoqualmie and Interstate 90 in that area have gotten somewhat of a reputation you know... for that kind of activity and perhaps that is what attracted him there. 20,27, both Seattle and both way out there and I bet you ...looking back...they're toward the tail end of 1983...one in September and one in October...about the time...you found several bodies that summer...and I bet you he was getting nervous...god damn they're starting to find my bodies again...excuse me, it's kind of fascinating to watch this unfold and I'm probably running ahead of myself...I'm confusing you two with asking questions...but just looking at how this unfolded I see here by the dates that ugh you found these first five really quickly...I'm looking and you can see he changes...he's saying, "obviously I'm not going to use that Green River again...at least not for a while,"...and he's looking for something that's more effective so he goes back to dry land...look at number 6...he went on dry land with an intermediate victim, actually she was in between and went to dry land with some of these other victims. And [this victim] was found in September but still he sticks to these sites and I've got it more deliberately analyzed in my notes here...what I'm saying is that between September 82 and May of 83 you didn't find any bodies...so in his mind he was effective...and he got how many in that period...he got...you didn't find a body for seven, eight months and this guy is starting to get bold again..."I finally found the ticket you know, they're not finding my bodies"...and uh, you didn't find [one victim] until May...and this guy he'd changed his tactic...

Investigator:

You say he's continuing to kill...

Investigator:

He's still in the Seattle area... We found these locations out here... what'd you think his next step would be?

Ted Bundy:

To go with what's working... You know, he moved up east of Enumclaw and he's going deeper in the mountains...he's trying something new, something different. You found three east of Enumclaw, you'll find he probably won't be going up there anymore assuming he was going there, obviously he was up there for a time and I'll bet you'll find more up there...at least in my opinion, four or five more up there.

Investigator:

You think he'll go further east then, on I-90...

Ted Bundy:

He's got the whole ...who knows...this guy is learning...he's trying to find the best way to dispose of his bodies as he can think of. Up to now, he's been hiding... he's been dumping or burying them, or I don't know, a combination of the two ...but God forbid someday he finds a secluded well somewhere that he starts dumping them all down the well or some other effective way or burying them in the basement like John Wayne Gacy... because well, quite frankly, I think you have a chance to catch him if you can start finding his next bodies... and I'll get into that later...ummm...I'm sure for a time after in late 83 that the discoveries, you found three bodies, in October 83, umm...and that bothered the hell out of him I'm sure...you found [names two victims] and unidentified bones...that would have been 10, 11, 12 on this list...11 and 12 were south of the airport, 10 was over here by Green River. So I'm sure he's getting a little edgy about leaving any more bodies around over here...and I don't think it is a coincidence that your next body in chronological order is ...there is no doubt there are bodies you haven't yet discovered but it's your early victims you haven't found...this guy hasn't selected sites with a surveyor but it's clear that it's something he's searched out and looked over in the daytime and the night time. But he's been back to them many times after...obviously. He's been back to them many times.

Investigator:

Before we get too deep into that we need to turn the tape over.

Interview: Florida Prison with Ted Bundy, Dave Reichert and Robert Keppel

Date: 11/17/1984 Time: 16:00 Tape 1/Side B

Note: I do not know how to distinguish the voices as to who is Dave R and who is Robert K, so I have just transcribed the conversation as "Investigator" and Ted Bundy. Sometimes, it will be obvious which investigator is talking as he names himself or the other one present, but I still left it as simply investigator.

Investigator:

You were saying?

Ted Bundy:

This is a spontaneous dialogue we're having here and that puts me in not an organized fashion and I'll go through my notes later and see if I miss anything that I had wanted to talk to you about.

Investigator:

So he's returning to the dump site?

Ted Bundy:

Not just to put the bodies back but in the interim, but there's a high probability that he's returning not only to drive by but he's returning to check those

dumpsites out...

Investigator:

How about after we found it?

Ted Bundy:

No, oh no, he wouldn't touch it then. You see, that's the problem. That's an element of surveillance. That's the interesting thing about a dumpsite. He doesn't put substantive victims in one, and move to another. Like, I have it in my notes somewhere and I should try and find it, but for instance, 11, 12, 13 and 6 are not girls who disappeared sequentially, they disappeared at different times, so he might dump one here and one here and one here and one down here and 7 is really strange cause why dump over here...that's kind of an anomaly. Anyway, getting back to these sites, he didn't use them 1, 2, 3 and then go over here, he jumped back and forth. Why is that, I don't know, it seems a little bit inefficient...if that's what he's doing. But he's still coming back to them obviously...and I think he's coming back to them more than just bringing bodies back. He's coming back to check out and see, to check what condition the body is in, to do whatever kick he gets out of it ... you know...obviously, whatever he's doing is not normal and you can't apply normal standards to it but my guess is that he's coming back if nothing more than just to check the site out...to drive by...or see if it's been discovered, see if it's been disturbed.

Investigator:

What would you say if he found just bones? What does he do with just bones? There's nothing else there...there's no evidence...there's no clothing...no jewelry

Ted Bundy:

Why is he doing this?

Investigator:

Uh hmm....he keeps a minimal amount of evidence...there's no fibers ...no hairs...

Ted Bundy:

He doesn't want to get caught...he may have a thing for clothes but more than likely the guy just doesn't want to get caught. I think leaving the victim...he knew it's the best way to leave the least amount of evidence.

Investigator:

Do you think he's saving any of that?

Ted Bundy:

Who knows? That's too hard to say...too hard to say...I don't know. I think, you know, I don't know enough about it or perhaps anyone knows enough about it to sayif he's being that careful, it's highly unlikely unless [inaudible]....but he doesn't seem to be a mentally disturbed individual...but he doesn't seem to be somebody who is really bizarre....and he's going about it in a very, very, businesslike efficient way, in his own way...and I don't think he's the type who's...being so meticulous in... as to leave bodies without any clothing...and to try and dispose of the bodies as best as he can...he's learning all the time how to do it better. He's not going to be the kind of person who's going to do stuff around the house...that's just my guess. He doesn't want to get caught. He's learning more and more. I'd be fascinated to read...or to see, a collection of news programs over this time to see if publicity built up and see if it intensifies and so try and plot his intensity, his activity level, with publicity because this

guy understands the difficulty of trying to do what you're doing when the public is around. It may be one reason why in the past eight months or so you just really haven't heard a lot from him.

Investigator:

Do you think it's significant that we formed our Task Force January '84?

Ted Bundy:

Oh sure. And you found those bodies in March and April...those remains....and he does not like that. And it caused him to reevaluate his entire strategy. If it didn't make him move, it made him rethink what he's doing. It doesn't make him stop. It just makes him think. Like you say -the ideal victim class. I don't know and maybe you don't either but all these victims were confirmed prostitutes at the time they disappeared. Were they?

Investigator:

Umm...not all. I think we're pretty safe in saying they were all prostitutes - normal arrest records or known associates say this person was known to do a trick here and there. It doesn't necessarily mean that each one of these has an arrest record. There are a couple on the list there that are...ugh... questionable.

Ted Bundy:

That would be significant in my mind because....

Investigator:

[This victim] is questionable....even though she seemed to hang out at First and

Perry a lot...she had three kids...and was leaving that night to go home on the bus.

Ted Bundy:

For a lot of reasons she doesn't seem to fit but I don't think that's, from my point of view, you guys have to deal with. I think the ones that don't fit, the ones that aren't prostitutes, would be how and why did they get caught. It's one thing for a guy to focus on prostitutes...he has an MO...a way of approaching these women. If it's just a matter of just driving up somewhat carefully and just picking up a girl standing on a street corner you know that's ..that doesn't speak to a very sophisticated method of approach....but if he has a method that is more generalized to pick up anybody that he selects...now if he's just selecting prostitutes now and then that's one thing but maybe later he's going to start selecting runaways or juveniles or girls that hang out in bars and the kinds of people, like you say, who are not being identified, that don't directly fall into your profile....you know, delinquents, runaways...and he just shifted his victim path to the right a notch and he's....not prostitutes, but prostitute types...victims who dress and act to him like prostitutes....and now he's just focusing on that... and that would be my guess...except he may have moved...and I don't think... but there are people who don't appear on your list and your statement that there may be victims in Pierce County fascinates me. I don't know why.... pure speculation.... I think the man's out of Pierce County. I don't know why. I have a strong feeling he's somewhere between Auburn and Tacoma. That's why I'm so fascinated by it....I just have a strong feeling about it.... Pierce County. And that intrigued me. I wanted to find out more about it. I feel about it because all the victims are moving south and it could be a deliberate attempt to set you off... all the victims except for the ones in the west have moved south from the point where they were last seen...Except for [victim], significantly enough, who went north. You know, a Tacoma victim that you put on there is ...you know they are all moving south and I don't think...I think he's dropping them off as he's going south...and he knows the mountains...with the exceptions of the ones up in the mountains. He's saying...well, I'm just going to try this, this time. But if you notice the ones up near Enumclaw, that's ...you know, Enumclaw is really northeast Pierce County and southeast King County...and it's probably in access to the Tacoma area, one of the nearest mountain pass areas to the Tacoma, in terms of getting out to the mountains, you go out Auburn area. And I know

Enumclaw...that area by Enumclaw...used to know it like the back of my hand...that's probably what this guy's looking for. There should be a number of them up there considering you found three. I saw two and I said there's more up there....at least five more there [chuckles] ...looking from your list here...and surely more than three. And probably like you say, the only thing that matters is it's like a needle in a haystack. If you look at your turnarounds, if you start looking at some of your more familiar sites on dirt roads you might get lucky and find something. I saw some trends like the trend to take Seattle victims west...and towards the mountains or south, way south...or the trend getting better as time wore on...or the trend to go east to Enumclaw...after September, October...and I could tell from the beginning he's selecting these sites with some care....he's going back...probably a number of times...to bring bodies back to the area, or to come back and check on a body...or check out the area.

Investigator:

Excuse me...the selection of sites, ugh, does it give you any idea as to what kind of work this guy does.... or what his interests are?

Ted Bundy:

Well, if this guy works, he works at odd hours, because he ...Monday through Friday there are victims. I mean, I've got an understanding of those that are missing and those that are found and I've got an almost even distribution Sunday through Saturday where they [inaudible] Sunday...if your dates are right and that's a big if. Of the found, emphasis is clearly on Sunday, Monday, Tuesday, Wednesday, Thursday, Friday. One disappeared on Friday and one on Saturday...understanding that. Altogether, it looks like it's evenly distributed so I can't....it's hard to say....in terms of day of the week, he doesn't have any particular preference or pattern and that's kind of odd But it's the lack of a pattern that strikes me. If you see something different, look for the days but that's what I saw.

Investigator:

Do you see this guy as someone who might personally come in contact with the police as a ...when police investigate some will intentionally go through the media, intentionally draw attention to themselves...all the time. And after they come in contact with you, they make it a game...

Ted Bundy:

And still be active? And still do his thing?

Investigator:

[inaudible]

Ted Bundy:

[laughs] Let's say that...let me give you a hypothetical. Let's say that this guy, some person, came to your attention...in the first part of 83. And ugh, he somehow came to your attention, and somebody talked to him or somebody went to him and then you have all these other victims...and, I don't think, quite frankly that the guy, that anything would happen unless he's clairvoyant because this guy doesn't want to get caught. If he comes to your attention, my guess is that he's going to... stop dead in his tracks and not do anything ... not draw attention to himself. But who knows?

Investigator:

How can you tell? January 84, when we first started investigating as the Task Force, it ballooned and prior to that there were maybe three people working it... and then forty-three people on the task force and several agencies...my concern is, is that going to scare him, scare him out of town...create another challenge....

Ted Bundy:

I don't think it'd be enough to get him out of town. I don't think, you know...on first glance, when I first saw this list...when things started to stop, around October of 83...something happened...he was obviously somewhere else...being with his family, or doing his thing somewhere else...Pierce County, whatever. No, that's not enough to scare him as he knows he's still in a mode he can manage. And I've read all the recent articles and back articles...well, here's what happened...about two months ago, I was coded disciplinary confinement and I read that article about the [victim] find, just the initial find, there was no confirmation one way or another and boom, after the DC I get no more newspapers. But they hold my newspapers out front so a couple of weeks ago I'm reading all my newspapers and I go back here and I see Green River Killer...[inaudible] and I can figure something out...but ugh...and I'm looking at that and I say that Green River Task Force is not...no more details, no publicity, in case ... you want to keep what goes in the papers to a minimum and that kind of fascinated me cause it cuts both ways...you need the public to help you but this guy he does not like publicity, he does not like the Task Force. Obviously, he doesn't want to get caught. So, he's going to make changes in his behavior both to stay ahead of you and to avoid publicity because the worst thing...the best thing he has, in my opinion, is the thing he has going for himself, a lack of publicity...the less the public is looking for him, and has their eye on the block, I know it creates a lot of problems out there having people give a lot of leads, but the less publicity the better and I quite frankly think the Task Force made him reevaluate and change his rites and improve his chances of avoiding detection. And he knows and he may not be as sophisticated in type as to sit down and analyze this...he knows it like any predator seems to know his victims...not in an analytical way but in a sensory, intuitive way...and so all he's doing now is ugh...he knows the kind of victims he was looking for are difficult to trace and not be reported right away down the line...so he's just taking advantage of that...

Investigator:

Do you think that certain types of reports, news reports and TV reports ... could set him off to kill?

Ted Bundy:

Good question...but one that I can't say. I'm sure if you analyzed...

Investigator:

For example, last weekend, one of the local TV stations in Seattle, had a report, a special report, a half hour special, on the Task Force and ugh I was interviewed and one of the comments I made was and I'm sure you watched that as it was well publicized...you know, would he take that as a challenge...we're going to catch him...or wait...

Ted Bundy:

We'll catch him...or somebody will catch him...in time. Ummm...course you can't tell him that and I think he's not the type to me...in that, he's not a show-off....he's not like the Hillside Strangler...he's not dumping bodies on hillsides...he's not doing things in a spectacular way. He's very concerned about hiding people....he's hiding his people.

Investigator:

I got a phone call the day after that...the day after...somebody called ... you're never going to catch me...it was the only phone call I got...

Ted Bundy:

It's not inconceivable...it's entirely possible he's getting an ego charge out of it...staying ahead of you. That cannot be dismissed. That's not what's motivating him.

Investigator:

What do you think's motivating him?

Ted Bundy:

In his own way, who knows? In the detailed recesses of his mind how this particular behavior pattern evolved...he obviously did not start in July 1982... killing... what he wants to kill....I could speculate but...some speculation might be useful but some is purely academic.

Investigator:

Go ahead...I'm interested in what you have to say.

Ted Bundy:

This would be purely speculative looking at his victims...there are an infinite number of ways to explain how a man can come to a point where he destroys human life as this person has...and I suppose the only way to really know is to have the man studied when you find him and even then who knows...but umm...killing because something...he gets a gratification out of killing and obviously there is a link between the two, sex and violence, because the victims are [inaudible]...the fatal link between sex and violence has been made and I don't know if it's anything that anyone rational can describe or explain except the fact that sometimes our society promotes sex and violence unknowingly through media and whatnot and this is one of my ideas where you might look at someday when you're really stretched for leads and I have an idea or two in this regard as it might help you develop some suspects... I'm for whatever reason, have already gotten to processing this point and it may have been a deliberate determination on his part that these were easy prey. It may be that he had something specifically against the prostitutes. What really confounds me in this

case is the number of black prostitutes...I mean, this guy is an equal opportunity killer and that fascinates me. He doesn't seem to have a preference racially ... that's kind of odd in the whole scheme of things... it certainly did puzzle me. To me, why didn't he shy away from black prostitutes and I don't know and I don't know if he may be seeking out a greater share of blacks or not I don't know... there certainly are a number at the moment...so, ugh, whatever inner drives are occupying him now it's obvious it's either preoccupation or obsession...his drive to do it is influenced by a number of factors, both internal and external... internally, I'm sure his desire ebbs and flows... internally as you can see by the list...externally, there may be things, any number of things that can influence... publicity...the formation of the Task Force...car trouble, job trouble, illness, you know. A whole host of things. Every day stuff that everybody goes through. There are some interesting gaps in here. For instance, he skips November 82 if your list is complete. He skips January and February. Sometimes these gaps are significant. He might have been sick, had car trouble...and maybe, maybe, let's say his status on February, it may be just an anomaly, an accident, or maybe he did get somebody and you just don't know about it...or maybe in fact, somebody saw him or did something that scared the shit out of him...he thought he really put himself out on the line...and he was at risk and so he pulled back to see what things would come of it...sometimes your gaps can be explained by the fact that he may have taken such a risk in a case that maybe he felt like he'd left some loose ends and he was kind of sitting there to see if anything materialized from it and once he realized ...

Investigator:

Can you explain what you mean by the risk he may have been taking...the time and date of the find versus the missing of the find...of [victim] and the find and the date of [victim]...cause we were probably there, down there, at the same time...

Ted Bundy:

Umm.. yeah, might have been but wouldn't have had big gaps so...got 'em on the 12th but he's active again sixteen days earlier...if [this one's] a victim

whereas [victim] 17 days later on Star Lake Road. Any time you find a victim within a matter of days of her disappearance you have a chance because things are fresh, memories of eyewitnesses are fresh and you know this, the [other] girl [inaudible] wonder if he left anything undone.

16:27 tape ends to change tape.

Interview: Florida Prison with Ted Bundy, Dave Reichert and Robert Keppel

Date: 11/17/1984 Time: 16:27 Tape 2/Side A

Note: I do not know how to distinguish the voices as to who is Dave R and who is Robert K, so I have just transcribed the conversation as "Investigator" and Ted Bundy. Sometimes, it will be obvious which investigator is talking as he names himself or the other one present, but I still left it as simply investigator.

Investigator:

Tape continues with Ted Bundy...

Ted Bundy:

After like you say, [victim], her disappearance occurred the same day they found the body...which, he went back to dry land.

Investigator:

What would you say if one of those victims was on the bank versus in the river?

Ted Bundy:

Of the five victims around the Green River which one was on the bank? And which one was in the river?

Investigator:

I was just trying to say what would you think if four were found on the bank and one was in the river?

Ted Bundy:

Somebody surprised him. If it was anything other than...if the victim looks the same in the way she was killed and the body looks like it's linked to the other four and one was found on the bank and the other four in the river then I'd say there's a chance this guy was surprised and bolted. I can't imagine why he'd leave this...'cause this guy obviously thought that dumping bodies in the river was a good way to get rid of bodies. And sometimes it is and sometimes it isn't [chuckles]. People who are looking for people who fall in the river after rafting accidents know that sometimes bodies just disappear on the rivers under the right conditions. I think he found out the hard way that they didn't. The bodies on the river...you could say he was surprised by someone. You could also say he wanted to come back and see that victim again. Bizarre, I know...but... ugh... but I can think of no earthly reason why he wouldn't throw it in and follow his MO.

Investigator:

Why do you think he picked two in one day?

Ted Bundy:

[These two victims]...I thought about that for a long time...the 11th and 12th...

Investigator:

You have [two victims] in, April...[names other victims]

Ted Bundy:

This guy gets hot he gets hot I guess...it's possible he picked them up both at the same time and all you had was a discrepancy on dates. Ugh...you have a black and a white here...[these two victims] were both black I believe so they may have been together...I don't know how he went about taking care of business but he just put himself in a position of picking up two at the same time....maybe because he hadn't wanted to but because he just got locked into a position where he was so driven he had to...he saw one and in order to get one he had to get two...but it does seem to confound the general pattern where he goes for one... you know, one person is easier to control than two unless he has a very good technique. And no one that I've heard of, or know of, has escaped from this guy so he's got a good technique once he makes a move...ugh...it's clear that he's very intense.. and it could be that he did come back one day and then another. But two blacks here and another two here...maybe he's so hot that he had to do one, one day, and come back the next. Certainly doesn't fit the general pattern. My guess is he had to pick up two to get one.

Investigator:

What do you say about that? That he has to get one that there is a general pattern...

Ted Bundy:

The pattern is...you shouldn't lock yourself into a pattern. Now, I hate to restrict my own analysis of any problem to a pattern by saying that is the pattern... because that limits your options...anybody could be doing this. But whoever he is, is very well composed and generally speaking a normal guy. Whatever... So, yeah, there are patterns, but that may be imposing my own head stuff on what's already here and that might not be what's actually going on....and so locations of bodies, what's in the area, and how he seems to jump around...from dump site to

dump site and so on and so forth. As far as his pattern goes, I'm just looking here at frequency, and how often he does it, trying to get a feel for his own inner intensity. What is driving this guy? You know, from the inside out. And how often does he have to satisfy that from understanding his desire to be cautious and to avoid detection. He's pretty active...he does one a week in July and he does five in August he settles down to 2 and 3 a month until next May when he does four. That's pretty active and he's going Sunday through Saturday, generally speaking and he has no preference for a weekend. He's going all days of the week. He's spreading them out, two or three a month, he's pretty intense. Even after the ... after some bodies have been discovered. But like you say, the Task Force wasn't formed until January...and the bulk of the bodies weren't found until early 84 so I think that's part of what's going on here.

Investigator:

Do you think this type of person would have to tell someone, say, someone he's married to? He may not tell his wife, but say, his friend? Or, talk about it somewhat? Do you think he had a partner in this or is it just one person?

Ted Bundy:

If I were looking at this and giving it my best...my best guess is that I don't think he's talking about it. Again, if he had, and I wasn't ...assume that he had, but he's not going to tell anyone about his bodies. He's well composed. He went over a year and a half. He's keeping it in...he's got himself under control. ...a certain amount of control.

Investigator:

So he's going to be able to control himself indefinitely...never going to lose control, make a mistake somewhere.

Ted Bundy:

Sure, he'd make mistakes...and ugh...he has made mistakes...

Investigator:

Severe enough to get caught?

Ted Bundy:

Sure...you know what law enforcement is...sometimes its luck. And your eyewitnesses...there's no question in my mind that you have people who saw this guy with a girl and just don't know what they've seen. At this point, it's covered with eyewitnesses. People who saw him, saw them, saw him walk up to them, and they off for a ride and right off the bat...I mean, he is not a phantom. He's good. He's well composed, he knows how to approach these people...he knows how to limit the risks...but there's no way to eliminate the risks. ... and ugh, the reason he's been so successful is awareness...and the kind of victims he's taking...if he was snatching high school girls he would not have gotten this far because of the nature of the business. He's mainly successful because of the kind of victim he's choosing...because a change of victim class is going to have a lot more coverage. And the reason you don't have a lot of eyewitnesses I assume or a victim that's alive is any time you have a space of days or weeks before the victim is reported missing and there's been no publicity even then... it's going to have gone cold. He will continue to do it ... he will continue to make mistakes. But he's obviously, this guy's He's...

Investigator:

Is there something that we can do to draw him to us...

Ted Bundy:

I think there are a couple of things, yes. [chuckles] I'll give 'em to you for what they're worth. We've got another twenty minutes...

Investigator:

They said we could stay later...

Ted Bundy:

Oh, okay. I thought they said five.

Investigator:

Are you going to miss dinner or are you going to eat later?

Ted Bundy:

I better ask about dinner. Oh, never mind, I eat like a pig...ice cream and all this stuff. Yeah, there are a couple of things that I would say are important just from what I know and hear...that you might try. And my opinion on one of my ideas changed radically, significantly and I feel that if it is at all possible to find a fresh body and the likelihood of that happening is small...if you can find a fresh body and it looks like the Green River Killer I'd put that sucker under surveillance. That sounds a little bit odd to you but let me try to...I've got a 20 page outline of why I think surveillance should be done and how it should be done and ugh, let me see if I can back up a little bit and try to make this sound a little bit more reasonable. First of all, I thought the guy just from reports I was getting here in Florida, I thought the guy was active as hell in 84 because there was all this stuff in the media about bodies being found.. well, now I understand that the bodies being found actually disappeared in 83, 82 so on the surface at least he's not as active in the same way as he was in 82 and 83. Is that a fair statement?

Investigator:

Yeah.

Ted Bundy:

But assuming some time down the line you start to find, you find, a fresh body... somewhat fresh...I would move security into the area and try to keep everything off the radio and set up a surveillance network on that area and you might want to move the body on recovery under cover of darkness because if your man comes back to that site by the time he gets to the body...to the point where it was you've already got his number...you'll already know he's in on it...the body doesn't even have to be there but it has to be moved...I'd remove it...and I know the instinct of the police is to move in and scour the site and everybody crawl in like explorer scouts and crawl on their hands and knees and this always fascinated me and appalled me because I always said Jesus Christ if they only knew what they'd found, their guy would come right up to them. My opinion, the best way, the best chance you have of catching this guy red-handed is to get a site where there's a fresh body and stake it out. And you might... you gotta find the body...

Investigator:

How about this, you say you got several victims out there probably east of Enumclaw...and there's another skeletal...he knows we found those three. Say, further east, he's got another site, where there's 2 or 3. He's not going back up on Fork at all. I don't think so...

Ted Bundy:

This guy is not going back...not for a while, not for a year or two.

Investigator:

We know he has some curiosity as to what the police did to the area where he dumped that body...

Ted Bundy:

I'm sure he does...he's very wary, I mean, I don't need to tell you that. I don't think he'd go back up there. He'd balance out the risks versus his curiosity...

Investigator:

What do you mean by that? His desire to see...he's dumped this body up there and in some cases we found he just...just skeletal remains. He wants to find out if we know where he dumped the body...he wants to find out if we know...

Ted Bundy:

No...You have a point there...but I would tend to say no. Because there are lots of other sites there where... there are remains which haven't been found and if he wants to get his rocks off he'll go to those sites as far as he's not a thrill seeker in terms of...I don't think...of trying to taunt the police. You may have information to the contrary. This guy doesn't want to be caught. He doesn't want to play around...he's not Son of Sam...he's not even a Hillside Strangler...that's why he's gone to such lengths to have variety in how he disposes of all these victims...Some people might read him entirely differently...I'm just giving you how I feel.

Investigator:

I'm sure you understand the logistics of staking out a fresh site and the problems involved ...

Ted Bundy:

I understand every one of them....and I can tell you I believe 100 percent...well, my opinion changed...if this guy was still active and if you were still finding fresh bodies where you had before...there's no question in my mind that you should stake out that site....you'd snare this guy. There's no doubt...now that he's not as active, my opinion is slightly different...cause he's dropping remains and I doubt he's going back to see bones. I mean, we're talking about finding a fresh site, one that he's actually using...

Investigator:

What do you mean by actually using...do you think he's coming there to lay the body out and leaving or is he there for a period of time?

Ted Bundy:

It's hard to say but my guess is that he's not there for a period of time but he's coming back from time to time and I don't think he's doing a ritual or anything and I'm not suggesting that but I am suggesting he's coming back to check out the scene...you asked the question, would he come back after the police discovered the scene? And you cite some reasons why he might come back...for similar reasons that he'd come back before. Even if he remained there...just to check the scene out...because again, he might be seeing if anything was completely destroyed due to the predation, or just to...check on the body to see if it is still intact or not disposed of by predators in the area or by some other personal gratification or to dump another body...and some of these sites are single sites but maybe it's nothing more than a drive by...but I'll tell you what, I know, I know, that surveillance of a site can't ...this guy is not superman, he can't see through trees...he's good but he's not infallible...and you all have the skill and equipment to stake out a site and put for a period of time, however long

you sit on it, and get all kinds of information. It's not just about getting a license...makes and models of cars which drive by there...but my guess is if it is a good site that has a fresh body or remains you're going to get more than a drive by....you're going to get him coming back to the site either on foot or in his car, or his vehicle. And I realize the enormity of the logistical problem...

Investigator:

Let me ask you a question about the Green River at the time...[victim] was the first one in the river and she's found in Kent police jurisdiction...second one, [victim], she's King County police...we're there finding ...at the time we're finding her...3, 4,5 are probably there, in the river already...or, maybe he's used that spot later that day...when we found [victim], alright...on the 15th when we find 3, 4 and 5, we set up a surveillance of this greater road area, ... it was a period of time...that was the only surveillance, there was none for [victim]... none for [victim]...we have a lot of information that we retrieved from those surveillances...what I'm wondering is with the theory you have, are these fresh enough?

Ted Bundy:

Oh yeah...but the problem....

Investigator:

When we set up surveillance, it's publicity that we plan these things and I'm talking about we've got hundreds of license plates that use that road...what are the proofs, or the potentiality of him there is that its publicized but the surveillance is covert for a while...

Ted Bundy:

But then how long was that on there before [a Seattle TV station] put it out there...

Investigator:

We had it on there about a week...

Ted Bundy:

You were there for a week before?

Investigator:

A week before when we had surveillance...not before we had the bodies found...we had the surveillance there. Think because they're fresh bodies is he going to come by ... by himself?

Ted Bundy:

They're in the river which is a little bit different than a terrestrial scene...not a dump on the land site...nevertheless, it is a possibility that he'd come by to check things out and see if there's any unusual activity...you find [victim] on the 15th...what publicized...

Investigator:

There was a little article in the paper about it...

Ted Bundy:

When did the surveillance begin again?

Investigator:

It began on the 15th ... around the 15th...

Ted Bundy:

Okay...[you have a victim] on the 12th and you discover [another victim] on the 12th...How much publicity was there about [the victim]?

Investigator:

Well, there wasn't a lot, we were trying to make a connection between [the two], it wasn't a big splashy thing... it was in a back section of the Times...I'll tell you where we're at, at this stage it wouldn't surprise me if someone were waiting outside the gate for us to talk to the press....it's incredible what we have to go through with something like that...

Ted Bundy:

Yeah, I realize that problem. I can't emphasize ...more on this about your question on surveillance in that area...I would go back and look at all your license plates and try to figure out where these cars are registered you know and I don't need to tell you basic case stuff, you know all this, anyway, but anything that is really out of that area you might want to ask yourself what is that car doing on that road?

Investigator:

I don't want you to think that this is a diminished question because we're

looking for ways to prioritize ... Not only do we have that but we've got 70 or 80 thousand documents piled over this period of time before the Task Force even came up ... we're looking for ways to determine if we already have his name... and what actively we should pursue...in prioritizing the information. Now, to me, what you say and what we believe is true, then maybe we ought to prioritize our effort a little bit and look closer at the ones we thought were flakes at the time... beyond the many thousands of phone calls that we get my husband has just slapped around the kid who likes the Green River who goes fishing down there and that type of stuff. We get thousands of those.

Ted Bundy:

I'd say, that if that's what ... at that point in the investigation where you're trying to develop new ways of looking at the stuff that ...

Investigator:

Every day we're looking at the best ways to prioritize...

Ted Bundy:

There's no question in my mind...even though I would say, if I was that guy, and I was looking at the newspapers and I was ...look if I knew...if I was the guy and I was reading the newspapers and I knew on the 12th that [one victim] had been found and I'd been there on the 12th then I wouldn't go back. But, let's say, somehow that he misses that article. Unlikely but possible. I'd say, if I were in your shoes, I'd look at those hundred license plates...because it's not like massive...like a thousand license plates...you're only looking for a hundred or so, I think there's a very good outside chance...I would if I were in your position, that's what I'd do and I might eliminate those that live in that vicinity or are somewhat out of Pierce County and if out of that county and I'd look at that person.

Investigator:

You think when we're out at these sites, processing the scene, and there's media or TV do you think he'd have the bones in his car and go out there and drive by us?

Ted Bundy:

So you mean you put it out there...

Investigator:

King County police are out there on highway 410 there's been another skeletal remains found and they're out there processing the scene ... maybe he throws a pair of skis on the top of his car and he's out there going up to Crystal Mountain...

Ted Bundy:

That's a good point...if he's as shrewd as I think he is I don't think he would but there are the arsonist types that like to fight the fire and stand back and watch the police put it out... you know creating a situation where you might be able to draw him to you that's an idea....my guess is when you're there, my guess is he wouldn't come there but I wouldn't overlook it...it's one of the things you do. Let me tell you where I'm coming from...that's a very good idea. My emphasis is it may be too narrow but surveillance of an undiscovered site that nobody knows about except for you and him and that to me would be just an ideal situation. Perhaps, beyond anybody's capacity, your capacity, to do...beyond that if that can't be carried off, then an idea like you have might be the next step. Maybe...who knows, if he is the type who gets a kick out of it...but I don't think he's going to want to get near you. Unless he is a little bit off and he is a thrill seeker.

Investigator:

Define these sites that are really far out...do you think he has a reason to be out there? Do you think he's found these sites before he picks his victim? Or, do you think he's picked up a victim in Seattle and he's driven off trying to find a spot? I guess I have about three questions in that. First of all, do you think he's picked these spots previously?

Ted Bundy:

Oh, I think your chances are good he's been there before, at least probably and maybe even looking for them deliberately. I'd say it's unlikely that [END OF TAPE]

Interview: Florida Prison with Ted Bundy, Dave Reichert and Robert Keppel

Date: 11/17/1984 Time: 17:00 Tape 2/Side B

Note: I do not know how to distinguish the voices as to who is Dave R and who is Robert K, so I have just transcribed the conversation as "Investigator" and Ted Bundy. Sometimes, it will be obvious which investigator is talking as he names himself or the other one present, but I still left it as simply investigator.

Investigator:

Okay this is a continuation of the statement of Ted Bundy and the time is 17:00 hours.

Ted Bundy:

Well, ugh, just from analyzing the map, they're insights you have on the map there. It looks like, certainly, he has returned to one site over and over...again, and that would lead me to believe that he's looking for good places and once he's found one he'll keep going back to it ... except in fact, you see him changing every time...like he's spread them out rather than going back to one place again and again. But my guess is that he has a type of arrogant mind and if he hasn't picked one out yet and he has a body in the trunk that ugh, he knows what he's looking for...but it's not as specific. Specific is an area like Star Lake that he's already leaving bodies at...if he's just completely at a loss as to where to drop the next one off...he obviously has an idea of what he's looking for ...as the turnaround...the deserted areas...the dirt road or whatever. I'd say he certainly has in mind what he thinks will be an effective place to leave his victims' bodies ...

Investigator:

Do you think he's thought far enough ahead to leave clues for himself in case he needs to stop if they're searching for his bodies...

Ted Bundy:

Well, he may have

Investigator:

What I'm getting at is, does he have a reason to see a good officer up there, in his area and there's no fishing pole, no rifle, do you think he might be a fisherman or a hunter...or pose as such...

Ted Bundy:

I don't think he'd try to pose as a hiker...I'm not sure that is such a good cover, hiker or fisherman...I think generally speaking a mushroom hunter, a hiker would be a good one...there you don't have to worry about being out of season, or being by a lake you're just out enjoying nature...something like that. I don't know that much has escaped his imagination 'cause you know you can underestimate the amount of thought he's devoted to this ... again, he makes mistakes, he's not perfect...he probably does a lot of things on impulse, but I think there are a number of things he does do to try and cover up his plans and one of those, I would not underestimate that possibility that he moved...Did he have a reason to be up there? Now, it's not going to be the best reason in the world, but might have a knapsack over his back or something like that ...but Jesus Christ, if you have officers out there and you find anybody in the area then ...and these dump sites are new, then they are at the top of the list...for sure, no matter what excuse they give you...you know, if you found anybody on foot within a couple miles of those bodies, then they'd be right on the top of your list.

Investigator:

Why would he want the three bodies found near the airport buried instead of being left out in the open like some of the others?

Ted Bundy:

Well let's say...there are sites to the South...one thing I would say is that they were the last ones...it would be an improvement over dumping them in plain sight...if it isn't, I couldn't explain it. Clearly, from his point of view, burying is more effective than dumping on top of the ground... again, I think it is just again that we're back to dump another one on top...that is unusual...and I ugh couldn't explain it.

Investigator:

Could be that she had some flesh on...that he buried her there...

Ted Bundy:

That burial had some ritual...looking for personal significance...apart from disposing of the body itself...I'd say no, but I ask you this, how many of this victim list were found buried or partially buried...

Investigator:

Oh, less than five...

Ted Bundy:

That's a cover-up isn't it...

Investigator:

Let's define burial...this is burial, this is partial burial...Ok, there's one here he buried, alright? Then there are probably three others with twigs covering them, part of them, and there's something unusual about two of the victims in the river...he's not waiting, he's throwing them over the bridge...into the river, alright? But not all....

Ted Bundy:

But look at yourself....nobody's consistent. They don't do everything the same every time. Why he would do something to one victim as opposed to another victim sometimes may be baffling even to him...if it's a him...you know sometimes...when you say something like that it raises the possibility there are maybe two people ... one guy buries 'em and the other guy drops them off the bridge...you asked me earlier if I thought it was one or two and I wouldn't want anybody, I certainly wouldn't want anybody, to think...my guess is that it's one...when you start finding variations like one buried and one not or bodies mutilated in the ways others aren't, you have to start thinking about more than one I guess, but I say if he's just raking stuff over some of them and burying others that maybe it's just the fact he happened to have a shovel in the car this time and the other time he forgot it you know [chuckles]... I mean, you might say this guy's more competent than that , perhaps, but perhaps not.. .. the last thing you think of when you leave the house is of the shovel in the trunk... maybe he doesn't like carrying the shovel in the trunk as it looks weird...he puts the shovel and the pick in the trunk while he gets his head together as he's leaving the house...

Investigator:

How about any compassion or emotion for the women or victims who died?

Ted Bundy:

I'm not saying that that person is devoid of compassion. Or, that he may have more compassion for one victim over another... my guess is that he has no compassion for the victims, he's doing his best to dispose of them effectively, he can't get attached...what he knows about them is rudimentary...and he's learned by trial and error. And ugh, you know, sure there may be some ritualistic significance in what he thinks in burying that one body... but my guess is there's no more ritualistic significance in the fact other than it just happened that he decided to bury that one that day as opposed to not burying the others and he tried...but in all cases, he's trying to hide them. And ugh, if he'd started burying them all, a lot less of them would have been found...if he'd buried them properly. It's just one man's opinion, right? Anything's possible but my guess is that it's just an exception to the rule. One of those nagging inconsistencies that I'm sure keeps you awake at night, right?

Investigator:

Is he keeping one for any length of time?

Ted Bundy:

Good question, and one that I'd asked throughout my notes...you know, I thought, when I got this data that you sent me the other day...that I might get some handle on about how long he was keeping them...and my guess is that considering the fact that he has burial sites all over the place and concentration burial sites in the valley between SeaTac and Star Lake...in that area...but actually they are all over the place...but victims disappear all over Sunday through Saturday, like I said...my guess is that he doesn't have a family or he isn't like a typical serial killer and he has a lot of time on his hands without worrying about who's asking where he is...and ugh...I lost where I was....so it's a good possibility that he lives alone and he can very well take them home...and keep them for a while...and perhaps some of your data, some of your evidence, I imagine, would show in fact, a girl disappeared definitely at this particular time

and place ... let's say on 10 o'clock on Saturday night and her body was found seven days later and she'd only been dead for two days. Now it doesn't look like he had such a very few bodies that can be analyzed like that...but you don't have that many fresh bodies that you can say the time of death was such and such...he had a few in the Green River where they were floats and in the River where they were floats...within five days of the time she disappears and where her body is found...

Investigator:

Well, that gives us something to work with...

Ted Bundy:

But when I started looking at where the girls were found when they disappeared from...my feeling is generally he's killing them shortly after ... you know and he's not taking them a great distance...that is, he's not taking them home.

Investigator:

Do you think he's probably doing it in his car then?

Ted Bundy:

I would guess the whole thing's taking place in the car...if he's picking them up in the car and they're being killed in a few hours of being picked up in the car and dumped...in the most efficient way he knows of and as quickly as he can...and he's not lugging them all over...either dead or alive...there may be exceptions. There may be exceptions ...there are always exceptions to the rule...but I can't say he'd do it the same way every time, but the pattern is ...it showed itself to me here where the body is found so close to where they disappeared...and he's up along interstate 90 and once he's killed them he's dumped them...

but if he has some place he can take them, if he lives alone, in a house or in a private apartment, with a private entrance, he may take them home. But it doesn't look like it.

Investigator:

Do you have any other ideas aside from surveilling a fresh body?

Ted Bundy:

Ugh. This is a little more creative...let me get my notes on that.

Investigator:

Would it be possible for us to get copies of your notes on that?

Ted Bundy:

You probably can't read them but I'd be happy to flesh them out but like I say... There are thirty or forty pages of letters between here and Seattle that have a lot of this in there.

Investigator:

Okay, fine.

Investigator:

I'm going to keep it going while I leave the room...

Ted Bundy:

You mentioned earlier to look at the situation and try to understand what's going through the guy's head ... you know, there's always the link between sex and violence. It's not a sexual act or a violent act per se, although there is a relationship there. Who knows what factors combine to cause a person to reach this point where he has to act out and do what he does, but I think in my opinion it's safe to say that in a case like that the guy fantasizes a lot and/or finds ways that vicariously express the thing that gets him off...which in this case is killing young women. One reason for doing it vicariously is that it's safer, plus it's safer sometimes to read a book or go to a movie and not want to do anything than to run out and do it...let me give you an analogy...skiing, when I read a magazine or saw something on skiing I'd always want to go in that fall...that was one example of me vicariously enjoying something I was doing but to engage in the fantasy ... the satisfaction...but enjoying reading or knowing about other people doing it is part of the hobby...so in my opinion it's safe to say ... to follow what I'm saying is...the guy who's killing these women, it's like a hobby to him or maybe more than that, maybe an obsession... but just like anybody else with an obsession like fishing, or bowling or skiing, it's a way to vicariously satisfy , going to shows, reading detective magazines...and I think there's an excellent chance that one way he gets off is to go to what is called the slasher films...I know this sounds weird, but years ago, I read about a psychiatrist who said if you only photographed everyone who came out of chain saw massacre you would have a mug book of all the active offenders in that particular and I would have to say that he was on the mark, generally speaking...and if I ran up against a dead end I would look for developing exciting movie leads ... at first I said well how do I take this idea that people who act out violently could get a thrill out of indulging their fantasies through media, books and magazines and TV... how could it be done and turn it into an actual technique for developing possible suspects...in this case, and I said have a slasher film festival...I thought about all the possibilities there...and that may get a little too much data ...I'm trying to tell you something that you might think a little bit odd...but I don't think it is... let's say that there's a film in the can somewhere that hasn't been distributed or released in the Pacific Northwest, a particularly violent film ... a Friday the 13th film or Halloween...death of young ... violence, murder of young ones...there's even been a few that dealt with the deaths of young prostitutes...and maybe it's too obvious about having violence playing somewhere...but what I thought,

what I would do, if I was trying to narrow down, I'd find the bloodiest, cruelest, slasher movie that's out there ...that's ever been broadcast...or shown in the Pacific Northwest...and I'd pick two theatres, one in Seattle and one in the Tacoma area, outside the general vicinity where these girls wereI'd find a theatre that was out and away from other activities so that when people came to the theatre they'd park...they'd have to park right in front of it...you know what I mean? As opposed to a downtown theatre...then I'd get the cooperation of the theatre owner and see if I could find a real vivid, lurid, sex and murder kind of flick...and I think there's probably several choices out there...if you looked around for it...and I'd see if this film for a week or a couple of weeks was well publicized in the newspapers... with lurid ...well, you've seen the photos in the film section when they're opening...I guarantee it will arouse those kinds of passions...it's unhealthy, but it will arouse those kinds of people...the link between sex and violence...and then, ugh, I would you know go for a period of a couple of weeks, photograph the people coming out of those theatres...I know this sounds weird but believe me, it isn't...ummm...I'd photograph every male that came in there...and I'd also correlate, the guys with the license plate and number of his car... as he's pulling from the lot...and just follow it and do it for two months...write down makes and models of cars as they arrive and maybe videotaped...or maybe photos as they go through the turnstiles...and later on go back and correlate the photographs with the auto license plates...because that would be the only way you could link a face with something concrete. That way, you could have somebody follow-up. And quite frankly, I really believe that done right and I don't know if you have the resources to do this, but after a couple of weeks, if you have any idea if you have any witnesses at all, you take the photographs that you took of these people...and put them in a book...of the males who were coming here...and after a couple of weeks of this film showing in Tacoma you would have a collection of individuals that you'd be truly amazed at your crimes against persons...not just you as a Task Force, but if you take that book of photographs and show it to different unsolved cases you may have people coming out of the woodwork. Men who people think are as normal as the day went on, but who really are highly controlled human beings who indulged their violent fantasies not only in acting out but vicariously through the media and their names are not known to you and their fingerprints are not in any file and the only time they are seen out in public is to do some of these movies to get off. And there's no other way you can reach them...no other way you can find them...it'd be like hunting...and what you'd have after a couple of weeks, is you'd have a pile of photographs...and hopefully photographs you could correlate to the car. You would also have a whole pile of suspect vehicles that

you could go through and ask if any of these are showing up or any of these showing up or if you had any way of pulling license plates of vehicles showing up....and see if any come from a long distance away...if a guy drives from Auburn to Bellevue...what would it say about him...is he really into sex and violence...hey, there's no better indicator than if a man is capable of this kind of act of killing all these women than an interest and he goes out of his way ... if there's any hook out there...that predicts whether a person could be capable or disposed to killing or murder is whether or not there's an interest in sitting down and viewing gruesome murder and I know but I can't think of a better way to tap into a whole reservoir of potential suspects...who are interested obviously in sex and violence...murder...

Investigator:

Do you think he has a VCR at home...

Ted Bundy:

That's quite possible...another excellent idea if he's that well off...one of my ideas of this guy staying and being active for so long in the same area perhaps he didn't have the money to go further...that he's stuck to a low paying job and he doesn't have enough to range further but he might but he might be well off enough to have a VCR and might in fact indulge his fantasy in that way....I know if I was in crimes against persons in any law enforcement agency I'd love to know the name and identity of every male that frequented the porno book stores and peep shows ...I'd want their photographs in my mug books and I know and I'd show that book to any case where I'd have an eyewitness to something but I didn't have any suspects.

Investigator:

Would he be drawn to the type of pornography types versus relationship types? Would it be graphic sex, murder...

Ted Bundy:

This guy isn't going to go into the Deep Throat type of thing...may or may not...the clear link in these cases is that he's gone beyond whatever kind of sexual thing he has that is peculiar and he's gone way beyond sex and there's a fatal link between sex and violence. See the key is here...it's not just a skin flick, he's more vicarious...he loves to do it whenever he can do it...and quite frankly, the movie, the book or whatever it is, when it comes to that, the more interested he's going to be.

Interview: Florida Prison with Ted Bundy, Dave Reichert and Robert Keppel

Date: 11/17/1984 Time: 11:28 Tape 3/Side A

Note: I do not know how to distinguish the voices as to who is Dave R and who is Robert K, so I have just transcribed the conversation as "Investigator" and Ted Bundy. Sometimes, it will be obvious which investigator is talking as he names himself or the other one present, but I still left it as simply investigator.

Investigator:

This is a continuation of the interview with Ted Bundy...

Investigator:

What would you say if out in those areas there are...we have found property cases, all of them...pantyhose and special places cut out in the them...I mean, it's all over. There's also at periodic points, pornographic literature...in fact, there's a possibility that if someone was in close proximity to a couple of our finds...and it's not hard sex murder type pornography it's stuff you and I could buy at any convenience store...lesbian and peculiar things...is this stuff not of interest to this guy?

Ted Bundy:

Could be...I mean I'm not saying that this guy is one dimensional, I mean, ugh, and sexually speaking there are probably many ways in which this man relates to women, and he has several....and it's quite possible he has normal relationships

with women or something that approaches normal relationships with women and you can't rule anything out. In fact, he may be a loner who hates women and he may not or he may be single or he may be married...I wouldn't rule anything out for sure. And so he may get off on mainstream pornography, commercial porn Playboy, whatever...but I think it's obvious that he's gone beyond that here. It's obvious that he's gone into violent deaths...and this has added to his fantasy so he's acting out. And so while you may have found stuff ...so called pornography...and hard core pornography in the area where the bodies were found... it doesn't mean he went for that or that he's drawn to those areas because you found that stuff there necessarily. I suppose you find lots of stuff... gunk...because those people dump stuff far out in those locations all the time, that's why turnarounds and back roads...some people think that's perfect to dump things in. No, I don't think that...I don't know, but my guess is finding that kind of material would not necessarily mean a thing unless you caught him right on top of putting....

Investigator:

What do you think finding things on top of victims are?

Ted Bundy:

I don't know... umm.. depends on what they are. I guess if there is a high probability they were left there by the guy who killed the women...you'd have to determine which ones he'd left there...

Investigator:

Say you had a lot of bodies where you don't find or can't tell anything from that but you have one where it is obvious that something is there...and it's such that it's left for you...

Ted Bundy:

May have not left it for you but for himself....maybe he left it there but again, I don't know what it is, and I don't want to know but I ...if it's something that you think is significant he may have left it there because he got off if he came back to find that there...

Investigator:

Do you see any religious aspect to this whole thing?

Ted Bundy:

You know, I've wondered if this guy is a [actor] type getting rid of prostitutes for the good of the community. Um, alright...I don't think so, frankly, I don't think that he meant to do the Lord's work, it just one possibility...I don't know, in examining any of these bodies if you find they were sexually mutilated in any way ... it seems to me if he was doing the Lord's work he'd just go out and knock them off and not dispose bodies somewhere and stripping them....stripping them is part of getting away with it and limiting the amount of evidence found at the scene...

Investigator:

What'd you say about mutilation?

Ted Bundy:

Well, if he's in fact, sexually assaulting the victims...and mutilating them while he was whatever...I doubt, if the guy is, if he has any religious motivations here they're seriously complicated as there some sexual and violent motivations ..I would say you wouldn't see him as primarily motivated by religious drive. My

guess is he did not pick these victims because he knows they're accessible and easy and difficult to investigate as far as law enforcement's concerned, that he's picking them because he has some particular grudge against them... I mean, a real hang up about young women...and I sense he's not one that's venting religious anger or outrage or moral outrage...but rather driven to kill and harm these people. And, he'll do it. And he'll continue to do it. I can't imagine him stopping.

Investigator:

People who have experience, believe the victims were put there in the river for some kind of baptism...and put there to observe the baptism...

Ted Bundy:

My opinion is straight-forward that he gets off sexually by grabbing and involving himself sexually with these young women. For whatever reason, who knows. Perhaps, I mean, anything's possible. My opinion is he's dumping the bodies in the river because he thought they wouldn't turn up and they did and it didn't change so he continues to go out...

Investigator:

What about a diary? Who, what, where the stature of each one...

Ted Bundy:

Yeah, over the years I had the opportunity to rehash and read about cases where a man accused of mass murders have been found in their belongings and been examined and they found shrines, newspaper articles on the wall, and everything but ugh ... this guy's not flying blind in the way that some of those Son of Sam types are... I mean, he's not trying to be sensational but low key...not only in

the types of victims he's going after but ...and my own opinion he's not dumping and disposing of them in a way to arouse sensation and he's not going about picking victims to create a sensation...he seems to be going to great lengths to avoid detection and quite frankly, even though he may have some mementos, photographs even, of these victims, I'm sure he's keeping them to a minimum, if he's keeping them at all... but because ... my guess is.... By the time he picks up a girl and by the time he fulfills his ...is very short...but there may be an exception...umm...he doesn't have an opportunity to collect a lot of stuff, he gets a victim and he doesn't have time to interact with them, maybe another time...except to get information which is another idea I have...looking at some of the victims on your sheet, I began to wonder if he might be interrogating them, some of them, before he disposed of them, to find names of other prostitutes that may be willing for instance ...[adjusts back to microphone] ...that may be why you have a situation where you have a [victim] go one day and [another victim] the next...he may have interrogated [one victim] before he killed her...and found out the name of several other girls in the area...that may account for his success in hunting down prostitutes aside from just taking whoever is available...but anyway, getting back to your question, I would tend to downplay keeping anything elaborate around because he might be caught. So much of this is pure supposition and it's interesting to speculate...my strong feeling is from your point of view is you want to catch him and there are all sorts of speculation that doesn't get you any closer...I agree to keep thinking about the possibilities you have with these sites, perhaps ones you've already located...maybe he will be going back to those. But any you locate in the future I can't urge you more strongly to devise techniques of securing those sites and keeping them under surveillance in some way....I know it's tough...but if you have an opportunity in terms of a good site ...

Investigator:

You mentioned a while ago typical serial murder...what are you talking about when you say that?

Ted Bundy:

I don't know...I shouldn't have used that, should I....[laughs] I don't know if there is a typical type. In fact, I should be critical of myself for saying that because I think there is no typical type ... from what I've studied over the years ... you have every type. You have the mother-hating homosexual, the apparently normal married heterosexual....and all types of characters in between. You have those who are mad and insane and those who have a motive, those who hate women and those who love them...generally speaking. So you have the whole gamut of them...you have drifters you have regular guys...from upper middle class to lower class...I don't think that's a fair statement, I know it's not a fair statement that there's a typical serial murder.

Investigator:

Have you read some of the FBI's published serial murder types of things ...

Ted Bundy:

I read one in Psychology Today. It wasn't much but I felt they were right on track. I can't remember what it was about that article that gave me the feeling that they were ...some statement that someone made that they were trying to base their understanding of this kind of behavior on facts...I think sometimes when you get too much into profiles and trying to understand why and trying to speculate why people do this or why people do thatthat what kind of person is he...you get away from the hard core facts and you really lose something...I know, from what I've seen, people start to limit their options...they start to believe profiles...and if somebody doesn't fit a profile ... you know obviously a lot of these girls here knew that there was somebody out there...who was looking for them or people like them...prostitutes on Pacific Highway South... were disappearing for a year and a half...and they continue to disappear because the guy who finally approached them did not fit their profile or anybody's profile ...so anyway, when I read that article put out by the FBI, you know I said really the only thing they can go on is what people actually do. Maybe later on, when you actually have somebody, maybe the psychologist can try and get into his head but if I were in your shoes I would try not to put too much weight on the profiles and all that psychological mumbo jumbo because all you've got is the

hard core facts and that's the only thing that's going to catch him later or he's going to catch himself.

Investigator:

Politically we have ...there's a lot gone down since the FBI profile...that and a psychological profile and we have profiles that we could read for a day and probably still not get through 'em ... and based on that, I've kind of the same opinion that we're working on the wrong end...what can the police do to actually attack this problem versus we always look to the experts, who have historically been experts like psychologists and anthropologists and you ask them questions about what is a guy like who does this and they can give you absolutely nothing that tells you how to catch him...they can tell you a bunch of bullshit about him and what his background might be like but as cops we don't know....there's no contribution there...now, what is the give and take...what should ...if the FBI is really serious about this profiling bit...what should they be looking for....

Ted Bundy:

A lot of questions there...good questions...the experts can give you some kind of background from which you can take concrete steps that you can take to help you focus your investigation... that's one thing. But some of the profiles I've seen, not a chance that they're wrong, they're just leading you down the wrong path. The only thing that's not wrong is the general names you have on this list, general dates when the bodies are found, where they were found, and work from hard core facts and that's what you've got. Who knows what the guy's like...and I know that's a backwards point of view from the point of view that wants to know what's going through this guy's head because that'll help us understand him better, but that's true...but on the other hand, that can lead you down the wrong road ... it can lead you away from your man. You could have him right under your nose and the profile says well this is the kind of guy that where law enforcement or people in general won't know that the guy is right there in front of them...and this guy is normal as the day is long...at least generally speaking... and what are you going to do, arrest everybody...every young man

or every man who has been sexually assaulted or has been abused or hates his mother...or everybody who walks out of a porno shop...you can't do that. These profiles...and I've seen them over the years...and I can see how they'd work... and I think quite frankly, my understanding is they tend to mislead... they can help, but they don't help if they direct the focus of your investigation in my opinion. Just like my idea about using that movie...I'm not an expert, I don't have a degree, I do have a degree in psychology...but it doesn't make me an expert in human behavior...but I think you have to

Investigator:

In that article you read, there were several proactives...you know what I mean by proactives? Things the police can do ... steps they can take....there were several proactive things that they suggested in here ..

Ted Bundy:

I don't remember...

Investigator:

Okay...one of them that they mentioned in there was the fact that they have a tendency to come back to graves ... grave sites... now youwhat they meant in this was where that person was now buried...and one of the things that they suggested in the article was going back to make some kind of public display... that feeds upon his emotion...what I'm going back to is where that girl is specifically buried if he knows...

Ted Bundy:

I don't remember that proactive technique that you mention and I cannot ... I wouldn't want to say that that would work...but we don't know what he'd do...

Just an idea, I do know, I can say, that the other thing worked...would work....and I, in my opinion, the person is just as likely to come back to a site that hasn't been discovered, especially a fresh one that they used that hasn't been discovered, in fact you have somebody who's clever as the Green River man is and as intense as to avoid detection and apprehension ... it makes sense to me that he's going to do what he has to do to avoid getting contact with the law... and the grave sites, the dump sites where the bodies are left are significant...in fact that is all you really have right now. All you have are burial sites. You don't have anything else. You've got bodies and the only place you know for sure that that guy was and where the victim was, were at those sites. There may be other evidence... but there is certainly no question that the victim and the guy were there... that's a tremendous advantage...that's where I would focus...not all of it but certainly a significant portion...So, I think that's a good idea perhaps....there could be curiosity on the man's part...once it's been discovered and you draw him out...but what if it isn't? Well, it's a risk you take... what if he doesn't come back to a grave site, a fresh one, because you put it under surveillance... well, that's the risk you take but I think they're good risks considering things you're up against...

Investigator:

Another one of these proactive measures they mention is creating a super-cop image so the investigation uses that to crack this case...and then hopefully the suspect in some form will want to communicate with him.....

Ted Bundy:

Huh.

Investigator:

Would he look at it as a battle? Maybe a war with a particular individual on the Task Force that's got some let's say, familiarity with the Task Force?

Ted Bundy:

Well, I can look at it and try to go back and see what I see here...and it's not much. But you've got tens of thousands of pages of bad [inaudible] in this case and I've got four here...

Investigator:

I think before ...

Ted Bundy:

In fact, in one of my letters I did ask exactly this...and okay this is what I'd start with...in terms of gaining understanding of what's going on ... I'd start with this from the ground up...what I see here is when you formed your Task Force and most of the bodies had been found ...you know, I'm not saying he stopped but would you say it's fair to say he's not as obvious as he was in 82 or 83? I mean, you're not finding them the way you were ...and that's not to say he's not putting them out there....but it doesn't look like to me unless there's something going on behind the scenes and you don't know and he's not in contact with somebody and taunting you ...

Investigator:

We can tell you about [a suspect]...have you read any articles about him? I mean, this guy has been on the news and he calls channel 7 all the time...and I interviewed him ...

Ted Bundy:

I heard something about [him]...

Investigator:

And he's involved with [other things]...

Ted Bundy:

Do you have any hair or fibers? You must not have much because I'm sure you would have done what you can to pin him down...

Investigator:

What do you think about the polygraph? Do you think a guy like this could pass a polygraph? I mean an adequately administered one...we've got probably a level headed person who's trying that periodically on witnesses and tries to do the best...one of our concerns is could a guy flunk a polygraph that wasn't the one...conversely, could a guy who was the suspect pass?

Ted Bundy:

I've heard lots of ... I used to watch the F Lee Bailey program that was on out here...I don't know if you had it on out there in the Pacific Northwest...and I know a little bit about polygraphs...

Investigator:

In fact, this guy contacted Bailey and wanted to be on that show...yeah he did.

Ted Bundy:

You can have experts that I can tell you if it's properly administered I don't think that they can be... but they tell me they can...and they tell me people can flunk...but Bailey's theory is that if you have a good person they should be able to figure that out....and that's probably the value of it. If you're man's good enough that the person who was killing other people will pass....

Interview: Florida Prison with Ted Bundy, Dave Reichert and Robert Keppel

Date: 11/18/1984 Time: 09:23 Tape 3/Side B

Note: I do not know how to distinguish the voices as to who is Dave R and who is Robert K, so I have just transcribed the conversation as "Investigator" and Ted Bundy. Sometimes, it will be obvious which investigator is talking as he names himself or the other one present, but I still left it as simply investigator.

Investigator:

This is a continuation of the interview with Ted Bundy...the time is 17:57.

Ted Bundy:

I can see where somebody like [suspect] can drive you nuts. Because what if you're wrong and he is doing it...sitting there and kind of gotten everybody...

Investigator:

It's no secret that he's flunked the polygraphs...

Ted Bundy:

Huh...I didn't know that either...yeah, I haven't read much about the case and honestly, until I got this I didn't have anything...

Investigator:

We brought some newspaper articles for you to read out of the Seattle Times....

Ted Bundy:

I can't imagine ... again, a good operator, the best the guy should do is to be....I can't remember the term I should use...

Investigator:

Inconclusive ...

Ted Bundy:

The best he should do is to flunk that ... why ask flunk? If you have a good examiner and he's well trained and your examiner has no axe to grind or desperately trying to do the right thing...I can't see how he'd flunk...but I can't base it on personal experience...there are you know who the experts are, in the Hearst case I'm sure that ugh...hmmm...

Investigator:

Is he the guy who is always critiquing the polygraph or is he the one that's supportive...I mean, I've read articles in general criminal law where they ...the two of them are fighting all the time...

Ted Bundy:

I don't know which side of the question he's on but I've heard that he's one of the best ... I've heard that he's been used quite often...I don't know who uses him, the defense or the prosecution... I mean, I'm not saying, I'm not recommending anyone in particular but I just can't imagine how that if it were properly administered with all the stuff... [inaudible]....but I mean it's not going to convict anybody but there's a lot of data here and if it's a fair examination, I don't see how he can flunk it and not know something...

Investigator:

If he was the killer, he would probably not want to take the test, is that what you're saying...

Ted Bundy:

Yeah, that's another thing...you just asked me for my opinion so ...I'm just giving you my best understanding of it. It's a tough line... I mean, my initial response is knowing what he's done, it depends on how sophisticated he is, maybe he is brazen enough to try to...but in private I would, I personally wouldn't take one of them...at some point down the line I might, that's an odd question to ask...I'm sitting here in Florida State prison and the guy's out in the streets and never been arrested and living outside the legal system and you run down and want to pick him up and ask him to take a polygraph test...maybe his desire to cooperate may overwhelm his fear of not testing ...maybe he really does feel he can outsmart the polygraph...on second thought, looking back and looking a little bit closer, I'd say it may be fifty-fifty...I think the smarter the guy is the more experienced the guy is the less likely he'll be to take the polygraph test...but there is a possibility that he'd do it just to show you he'd been cooperating...that's been my experience and my philosophy. I've taken a couple of polygraphs and I've talked to guys that have taken them and I've seen what's happened...it popped them in prison. So, I've pretty well had an inside look at them...from a limited...I'm not an expert. But I think, if the guy does take it, he's going to fail, if he's not telling the truth if it's administered proper. If it's properly administered.... but talking about [suspect], when did he come to your attention?

Investigator:

September 82. That was a hypothetical of the beginning of a guy who came forward and snitched on somebody else and now he's...I mean, we're talking about September 82. He's got to have an awful lot of balls...

Ted Bundy:

You're in a pickle aren't you...I can't imagine anybody doing that but I mean, let's face it, we're not dealing with rational behavior. I don't care what the guy's doing on the surface ... you're obviously not dealing with rational behavior. Wish I could help you more on that. If it's not the polygraph and I don't know... hairs and fibers would be the next step. You know how that goes.

Investigator:

We'll see...

Ted Bundy:

I'd go back and think a little bit about the Wayne Williams case. There were some procedures there that helped track Wayne Williams down. Maybe they helped get lucky but he was of course you know eventually apprehended and you know how luck is...they staked out the river. I wrote you in one of my letters I said you know look at the Wayne Williams case, somebody can be apprehended in that way just as he's going back...not to the same place as say, you are...

Investigator:

Maybe we should give him the opportunity to resume his activity and be gone for a while ... [last is inaudible barely discernible]...

Investigators talk low so that tape recorder cannot pick up conversation...

Investigator:

Would you ever want to talk to us more often?

Ted Bundy:

Sure.

Investigator:

Do you have visiting tomorrow?

Ted Bundy:

No, just today... Saturday, Sunday I have a lot of visiting.

Investigator:

Does it matter what time we show up here during the day? Are there activities you want...or that we'd interfere...

Ted Bundy:

No.

Investigator:

Do you want to have a conference in the morning or afternoon...

Ted Bundy:

Whatever ... you may want to leave those clippings and if you can read my scratching...

Investigator:

Maybe we take those tonight and look them over...

Ted Bundy:

If you want, sure that's okay...again, I don't know if you can read them...when I make notes, they are just that. Not really readable...they make perfect sense to me, I have a number of pages outlined, on site surveillance...you might try to plow through that if you have the time to decipher ...

Investigator:

There is talking but it is low and not discernible and it seems they are looking through the notes... then, one investigator says, "Do you have cable TV yet?"

Ted Bundy:

[laughs] I don't have any TV right now. I am in the process of getting out of my disciplinary status and so it means a period of transition...I got my visits back now and I'm trying to get back my radio and TV...

Investigator:

The Huskies and Cougars are playing tonight...

Ted Bundy:

Yeah, you know the Huskies fell down again, couldn't hold on to USC...no offense...I follow them and the Seahawks...In this part of the country they follow the Gators and Miami Dolphins.

Investigator:

I better shut the tape recorder off...[turned off at 18:08]

Investigator:

This is a continuation of the interview with Ted Bundy at present date is 11-18-1984 and the time is 09:34 hours.

Ted Bundy:

How do you spell your last name, David?

Investigator:

[spells it out]

Investigator:

Was there anything that came to your mind after you left us last night that you thought about talking about today?

Ted Bundy:

Yes...I got to thinking about yesterday and I'm glad we quit when we did 'cause I was really starting to ramble...I'd had a six hour visit and when you spend so much time in your cell you cannot socialize with people I don't have the mental endurance to go for a very long time talking...I get really tired...so by the time we got together around 3:00 I was pretty exhausted. So, I am afraid I was rambling and maybe not as coherent and concise as I should have been...so anyway, I got back to my cell and I was thinking about a lot of things...a lot of questions you'd asked and the answers I've given and I thought perhaps they weren't complete and so it occurred to me, I jotted down a lot of notes, and at some point I'll write to you in more detail for whatever it's worth...yeah, there are a number of things...one of the first things that came to mind was what you were talking about and Dave was talking about was the proactive types of things...we talked about drawing a guy to the site that's been discovered and maybe my initial impression was that in this case it might not be very effective...but I shouldn't discount it because who knows...and something like that, or super cop, like you were saying, getting somebody on the Task Force to be the focus of attention, perhaps that would work... I was thinking about it, and I just have been looking at the way he's been acting and I can't imagine him playing games with you but I don't know if he's going to change. It doesn't seem this person is going to want to court disaster...any more than necessary and I don't know, nobody knows, he's a unique individual...I don't think anybody should try and second guess him. Something like you're talking about, proactive techniques, are really worth a shot it won't hurt...except don't allow yourself to get hemmed in by those proactive techniques alone... I think there are others but [drifts off inaudible]...the situation with the cab driver where the guy is apparently dumping the bodies along the roadsides and turnarounds, I don't

know whether it is true or not, would seem more amenable to a proactive technique because he's behaving in an inflammatory manner....it's one thing to dump a body along the side of a road and whether you want attention or not...

Investigator:

[Serial killer] in California is one.. he was along I-5 and he was some sort of a salesman and he would drive his car up and down California and Oregon all the way up and he would pick up young male hitchhikers and strangle them and put their socks in their mouth and stuff like that and he would drive up a freeway ramp and he was so successful that he's upwards of 50...just on that particular thing over a period of 3-4 years...and convenience, in my opinion, and the convenience of the freeway allowing him to just drop and run and gone, you know, it seems like a guy like that isn't trying to draw attention to himself as a matter of convenience...or trying to trick 'em and out they go... some of those are right in the middle of the off ramp.

Ted Bundy:

God...

Investigator:

There was one left off the road, up in Oregon...but all the rest were dumped right on the shoulders ... the one that was left off the road, he ran over...for some reason, and he was knocked several feet into the brush...that was the only one.

Ted Bundy:

I see what you're saying...sure. There may be no explanations. Each case, obviously, you just have to look at...um, like it's the first. [laughs] 'Cause it is...

there are unfortunately, a lot of guys out there like that individual out there, some less active, some more and that's in a matter of speculation and I ...getting back to your case, umm...a couple of things interested me in addition to that comment about using the proactive techniques, which I'm sure you're trying anyway, and they might work, who knows... I hope they do...about the letters, one thing I want you to understand, apparently there are two letters you happened to see, written to you, on the 23rd of October, sent through [individual]...

Investigator:

Did you give it to him in person or did you...

Ted Bundy:

No, I mailed it to him...and he acknowledged receiving it and forwarding it through his Seattle office, this letter that I have dated October 24th, and then another letter, my last one, sent to David, on the 27th, of I think 20 to 25 pages, sent the same way ...I never did receive acknowledgement of whether he'd received it...

Investigator:

Okay, when you send such from now on, I'll always send something back that tells you that we have it...[inaudible, voice trails away and goes soft]...well, it looks to me like you wrote your first letter October 1st and I believe that we received it the 15th and that's a long time in between before it gets to us...

Ted Bundy

Emotionally I felt and I still prefer, not to have this ... that I'm talking to you becoming public fact Not that it's going to injure my reputation or anything [laughs] but it's just unnecessary...

Investigator:

We've considered what to do about it because we've already...if you give the press something that they think you're hiding something and you're really not...but on the other hand, we've always had a policy not to lie to them...at least, be frank with them and say, yeah, we talked to him but we can't divulge what he said...and that would be our response if they ask...I don't even know if they will...I mean they're trolling around like hell trying to get to find something right now...[voice trails off]

Ted Bundy:

Oh yeah, you're going to find all sorts of manipulation...

Investigator:

But that's the only way...that would be our response to them...to do that...

Ted Bundy:

Yeah, fine. I have no problem with that. The Enumclaw, I have some thoughts about the Enumclaw site...sites east of Enumclaw...where you said you've now found 3...and I only have 2...

Investigator:

The last one was just found Thursday...

Ted Bundy:

Is she out there? She wasn't listed as missing previously?

Investigator:

We don't have her identified yet. You can list her as bones 14... this could be bones 19...erase the ones that are on here that are in the past...but we'll send you who it is...if we can identify it...

Ted Bundy:

It's identifiable? That's one of my questions in a number of these things...is that you have bones but are they identifiable?

Investigator:

There's general denture stuff there...

Ted Bundy:

And you're trying to match it up with your still missing people...and that don't match....

Investigator:

No, that's right...umm...there's a problem with these people in the way they don't go to dentists, I mean, sometimes it's years since they've been to one...and we have a hell of a time tracking down who is the dentist and they want current dental workups as dental work has changed so much just in ten years that we lack the current stuff...and they're much more capable of using x-rays to identify with in combination with an actual read of the charts, the dentists do, but sometimes it's impossible to get the dental information on people ... and we still

don't have dental charts on some people at all...in fact, one set of bones is still very close to three people on our list but we don't have good enough dental charts to say yes or no on any one of them... so it's just containing the year....you have some observations about Enumclaw?

Ted Bundy:

Yeah...that and the North Bend sites are fascinating, and in fact, if you look at a detailed road map of the area, especially east of Enumclaw, [they are reviewing some kind of map or paperwork]...

Investigator:

Had one in Chehalis county....

Ted Bundy:

What about this one here you have listed in Snohomish county, it's definitely here on your list...

Investigator:

That's one of the things I was going to talk to you about 'cause ... ugh ...

Ted Bundy:

Cause it's not on your map of the 27th, she's not on your map of the 27th...

Investigator:

She was initially a missing person out of Everett, that we had on our list because number one, she was a prostitute, number two, she went missing for a long time...ummm, what had happened was that in 1983, authorities found a skeleton. Well, because of the lack of communication, they have not sought out our victim list to see if any of our victims matched their skeleton...so, I don't know how long the delay there, it was probably at least 8 months later that we got together with them again and that they identified [victim] as the bones...and that particular bone find was up near Granite Falls and they have no other finds up in that area...it's just totally isolated...there's some independent things about her that are slightly different than the rest of ours but we kind of included her in our portioning techniques so if somebody mentions something about Everett Falls, we can continue with the conversation. We're not really high on the fact that she's one. She very easily could be one...I mean she's not as recognizable as one as the rest of the sites...

Ted Bundy:

She did seem to stand out as some other victim just in terms of where she fell in the series of victims...in 83...a little bit out of place...

Investigator:

She just happened to be released from the juvenile center up there...sometime in May of 80...

Ted Bundy:

Vehicles...anything known if they're driving one...

Investigator:

Not a damn one of them.

Investigator:

Not a darn one of them even own a car, do they?

Ted Bundy:

It's not inconceivable that this guy could drive that far north...it just doesn't fit the pattern...you find that he'd drive down to Chehalis on the spur of the moment...or Portland...or Bellingham...

Investigator:

Do you feel that that's a part of his need? To ...does he need to be out there... I mean, everybody always says these people are prolific drivers and they're cruisers...does he really feel the need to be out there...is he taking more of a chance then in being on the road?

Ted Bundy:

Sure, my guess is yes. My guess is that he's doing a lot of driving...

Investigator:

He took a lot more driving than just doing this, right?

Ted Bundy:

Oh, yes. He did a lot more driving than what's necessary. My guess would be that if nothing else that he'd be hunting for sites...for places, or going back to

places where he's left bodies...but there's a good chance that he'll feel somewhat constrained, I mean, there's no question that he could probably do one a day if he wanted to for the time being...there are some times when he does do one a day...[laughs] this is why I don't think the guy is just going to stop. He's a very intense as you can see here where he does one and two a day. And that's an extremely intense kind of need. It just doesn't go away. But I'm sure there are times he recognizes that if he just keeps doing it as much as he'd like to do it, then he's just courting disaster. He's going to make a mistake. So, there are times when instead of actually doing it he's just going around and hunting...and pretending he's doing it...and just going around and developing more information...more and more about these prostitutes, where they are hanging out, just sort of stalking them but not ...

Investigator:

Do you think he's maybe picked up some of these prostitutes and have some kind of sexual experience and then release that person?

Ted Bundy:

I think there's an excellent chance that he's picked up a number of prostitutes who he later released for any number of reasons...perhaps he just felt an unusual wave of compassion, maybe he was surprised at some point and felt it would be too risky to do it to that individual...maybe somebody saw him at some point in time after he'd made contact with her...or maybe at the time he just didn't want to go through with it...

Investigator:

Do you think there is something maybe he would do that was unusual that our officers could ask about? We're interviewing prostitutes of course over there in the areas of prostitution...is there anything that you could think of that our officers might be asking those girls that this person might display in the initial contact?

Ted Bundy:

Let me write some of this down....

Interview: Florida Prison with Ted Bundy, Dave Reichert and Robert Keppel

Date: 11/18/1984 Time: 09:50 Tape 4/Side A

Note: I do not know how to distinguish the voices as to who is Dave R and who is Robert K, so I have just transcribed the conversation as "Investigator" and Ted Bundy. Sometimes, it will be obvious which investigator is talking as he names himself or the other one present, but I still left it as simply investigator.

Investigator:

This is a continuation of the interview with Ted Bundy...the time is 09:50.

Ted Bundy:

Yeah, just my initial impression would be far enough along what I said yesterday...he's probably killing them fairly quickly, fairly quickly...at least most of them, maybe not all of them...

Investigator:

I guess what I'm getting at is there anything that he would say to the ones that he let go...anything that would tip them off that maybe they are released, they don't call us, we end up in interviews years later and maybe we're not asking the right questions...to get the information that

Ted Bundy:

Well...what I've got in mind is that nobody's gotten away from him once he's made his move that I know of...is this true, I mean...you don't have anybody that he's pulled a gun on somebody or tried to tie them up or whatever...

Investigator:

No, as far as, I mean, we've got all kinds of kinky instances with prostitutes out there....

Ted Bundy:

Sure...that's the problem...

Investigator:

Yeah...so we more than likely have identified those types of people...I mean, we followed up on those incidents...and found out they were not the Green River Killer...but that's different, we don't have anybody we feel anyway, has escaped from him...

Ted Bundy:

Whatever he's doing he's doing it very effectively....I mean, he's done three dozen at least...and nobody's gotten away from him...that's very impressive, sometimes he might have done two at a time it looks like , hell, what I'm saying is my guess is he's driving to a location that he feels very safe in, where he can make a move, okay, and if there's trouble nobody will hear or see any kind of struggle or whatever...he ends up doing...to ugh take control of his victim...and so I don't know how these prostitutes conduct their business...once they get in the car, I guess it's fairly standard procedure to go somewhere where they won't be observed...but this guy's gonna go somewhere where he's very sure , at least initially, that's what my guess would be...before he makes a move and there's no

question in his mind that if there's a struggle or some kind of problem...they won't be heard...or they won't be seen...by anybody passing by...so, yeah, one of the questions I would ask them that just comes off the top of my head is do you ... have any of your clients taken you to locations that were particularly remote or secluded, ...as far as him saying something like you got away from me this time so...

Investigator:

Something obvious...

Ted Bundy:

[laughs] yeah, something obvious...you're going to have men clients at least some of them who might be fairly bizarre in their relationships with these women for one reason or another and who may say something out of the ordinary, I don't know...if it would be significant...my guess is that he's making his move really quickly and doing it in locations that he feels very confident in ...and making a move and unless he has any kind of vehicle where he feels , a van for instance... and a van gives him control...in an automobile people can see inside your windows...if there's a struggle...so that's just the first thing that comes to mind and let me give it some thought and write things down and give it back to you...

Investigator:

Okay...umm, how about the pickup points...you strayed away from that an awful lot or are you concentrating on where his dump sites are...but the pickup points to he's creating opportunity and he feels comfortable...and the pickup points frankly coverage is there...not only johns patrols but we're trying to catch the johns but there's forty police officers there harassing the prostitutes all the time, and there's a lot of police around there...how does he feel so good...it's just like ...

Ted Bundy:

The same way that Wayne Williams felt so good in Atlanta...he knew that scene inside and out...with all that heat that was coming down in Atlanta, this is a case where you know what you have, I mean, look at what happened in Atlanta. There was more heat in Atlanta than there was in any case, except the one you're working now...no [laughs]...except for the young black children disappearing ...there was an incredible amount of pressure to be aware of ...and he was still doing his thing...even after all that publicity...and all that heat....Why? Because he knew that scene inside and out ...he was efficient in water and that's why in that last letter I wrote to you that you probably haven't received yet, even though I was sort of speculating, irrationally sometimes, my feeling was that your man's a part of the subculture...that these women find themselves in...and now I don't know that you can say there's a particular set of characteristics that characterize the subculture of prostitution, but I try to perceive it, conceive it, as a subculture that involves drugs and runaways and certain individuals just comfortable in dealing with you know that kind of scene...ugh, be it the bar scene or the drug scene, or the prostitute and runaway scene...ugh, the person who's doing it knows it very well...he knows these individuals, he knows how to manipulate them, he might not even be coming on to them as a john, ...ugh, though that appears to be the most reasonable explanation...

Investigator:

Well, he sure doesn't stick out like a sore thumb...

Ted Bundy:

No...sure, and he's not your typical car-man. And my feeling about the guy is he is very low-key and inoffensive...and I doubt that he's ...and my guess is that he's got more than one approach to these girls cause

Investigator:

Have you thought about the approaches at all?

Ted Bundy:

I have...

Investigator:

What would the hook might be...how do you think he's accomplishing that...

Ted Bundy:

It would be beyond something other than driving in...if he was just snatching prostitutes I think you would have caught him by now...like I said, I think he knows this and knows what these girls like and what they need and ... whether it's coming on as a john or the fact that he may be offering them a form of money or drugs...I've thought about the various ways he might approach them...or calling them up on the phone ... like I say, somehow he was able to contact them by phone ... some of them, not all of them, I'm not saying he has one technique...this guy's bright enough believe it or not to ...may not be a wizard, but bright enough to understand that he can't be approaching them the same way every time...because he knows just like you know the whole area is under heavy surveillance...even at the best of times...in fact, he was going back there after the heat was on...[chuckles] I was continually amazed by this guy's balls...after all the victims he's snatched off Pacific Highway South it seems he could disappear from that... I don't know...my guess is that he just blends into that scene and he may well be a familiar type character...and he may feel so comfortable with these types of women...and understand them so well he knows how to manipulate them...

Investigator:

How stable do you think he is in his occupation? Probably our number ruse is to pose as a cop because that happens all the time...and of course Portland's going crazy right now, cops can't even go up and interview prostitutes cause there's so many johns out there flashing badges at them...ugh, and it's getting monotonous...

Ted Bundy:

Yeah, my number one ruse or lure would be ...well, I don't think it would really be my number one necessarily...maybe number two would be the police badge...you know, it commands a lot of power...or at least initially until the cover is blown...Bianchi and his cousin Buono in Los Angeles...umm, yeah, that's a good one and like you say these girls after a period of time ... prostitutes working Pacific Highway South must have had reason to be very wary...some may not be that into it...but a cop flashing a badge I don't know, ugh, what their reaction would be ... but after a while even that would be scaring them...and I'm sure you've interviewed them...and after all this having people approach them and flashing badges and frankly, you know, that's another question you should ask...of all the prostitutes out there, have they been approached by anybody flashing badges? Cause my guess is that if the guy is using this technique, sooner or later, he's going to run into somebody that he flashes a badge on and something happens ... she either backs away or somebody's or other event, intervenes....because he's not getting everybody he approaches... he's not getting everybody he approaches... whether he's successful and some of them he has contact with and then using all his mental powers to assess the situation as he's in the process of trying to convince her to go with him and something doesn't feel right...she doesn't appeal to him for some reason once he starts talking to her, she doesn't want to go...something happens, where in fact, he doesn't think it will work...if he's using the police badges, I mean, that's going to stick out in her mind...and see, he's going to know that too, and if he fails as he's bound to do at least once in a while, that's got to be something to follow up on and I don't know if you have any reports like that or not...in the Green River case...or if you have in Portland...but because these prostitutes are so wary I think the guy is coming on a really low -key manner and he knows them so well and I don't think he's coming on as a cop cause if he did I think

you'd know about it by now...that's not to say he hasn't done it or hasn't thought about doing it but I wouldn't try it...[laughs]...hunters read Field and Stream and this guy's reading Real Detective...so he's always thinking of new ways...my guess is he's so non-threatening, so low-key he knows them so well that either he's coming on as some type of John or some type of something else...and something else might be the good device...

Investigator:

In your notes you wanted to know if the victims were pros or not...what significance did that have...

Ted Bundy:

Well, let's assume...if you have victims in there that are not prostitutes, that are not...obviously he's coming on to them, and this is what I feel, he has a method of approach, he has a lure or a ruse, which applies to more than just prostitutes...he's not walking up to them and saying okay, hey baby you want to go for a ride and I'll pay you fifty bucks or whatever...if you have people if you have victims who are not prostitutes, it says he has a ruse that is more generalized...that in fact he's not coming on all the time...as a john...he's coming on as something else...or offering them something else...see what I'm getting at? If you had a hitch hiker in there or somebody in a bar who may have dressed like, or acted like, or looked like, a prostitute, who in fact was not, who may have appealed to this man for one reason or another, or would not have responded to an approach a john would make to a prostitute, then I would say you have a guy who is obviously capable of using ruses that are applicable not only to prostitutes...

Investigator:

Do you think that uh, what is this guy's strength? Is he all wrapped up in the event, the post event...what is he like afterward, you know...like, he might be somebody's neighbor or he might be somebody's live-in boyfriend, for a while...something here that we could key on out here either before or after he...that

somebody else might see him...we have a lot of people that call in, and ugh, they give us indications that 'there's something wrong with this guy' and I don't know what it is ... something...and before... understand what I'm getting at?

Ted Bundy:

Yeah, I see what you're getting at...when I don't know something I'll tell you... and when I don't have a feeling for something I'll tell you and I don't have a feeling for that...I don't know what condition the bodies were in or anything....and whether you have any evidence that they were sexually assaulted or then somewhat physically traumatized...umm, and I think quite frankly in most of your cases there's no evidence at all...that would help you on that...and I just don't know...I can answer part of your question or try to answer part of your question, I think that ugh the hunt, the searching out, is always a big thing for him...he's probably invested a lot of time and effort into it and you asked another question earlier about how would this affect his job...would it have anything to do with it... and I think in that period of July 82 till October of 83, I mean, he was doing 2 and 3 a month and some months he was doing four and five...and that takes an enormous amount of effort and concentration...and to be able to hold down any kind of serious job under those circumstances can be extremely difficult...and at this point his employment history might be somewhat uneven, and I would expect also that he's not earning a lot of money, or he would range further...and that might be one of the reasons he stuck around so long ... quite frankly, he might not have been able to afford to go further...or to take more time off from work...there are other explanations but none that appeals to me...but as to what he might do to them once he gets them that's the big blank spot...in my mind...I don't know ... I can't even begin to guess... although I think he's probably a good deal more interested in or caught up in the hunt than the actual doing of the deed...

Investigator:

Um, in the hunt, he's initially picked on a rather easily approachable victim... um, if he's wrapped up in the hunt, comparatively speaking in going into a bar and picking up somebody...or stopping by a bus stop and seeing if someone

wants a ride...or actually going through like some people have of an elaborate ruse, does he seem to be that skilled if he's picking on a very vulnerable population...who's right there...

Ted Bundy:

That's a good observation...

Investigator:

If he doesn't have to work that hard, in my opinion, he's a lazy son of a bitch...

Ted Bundy:

That's right, that's right...um, although I think that my guess is that he's a little more skilled than you might think if in fact he's picking on people who are close to prostitutes ..I don't mean close to prostitutes...who are vulnerable...cause they're runaways...or cause they're lonely...and on the run or need some drugs or something...it might not just ... but you're right he is lazy I think...not lazy, he's pretty sharp in most respects...none of them have gotten away from him... he's definitely thought a lot of this stuff out...he may not be very sophisticated in his approach, but give him time...he's working on it... and if he ever feels like he has to change a class of victims and he comes up with a more sophisticated approach then you're going to see that too....ugh, starting to show up, right now he's picking on somebody who's vulnerable and that is good for him and he doesn't have to work that hard...He also knows though that it's not just that they're vulnerable types ...the police have a devil of the time, you're having a devil of a time investigating their disappearances...precisely because of the kinds of women they are...so it may not just be because they're vulnerable but also because they are difficult to investigate their murders and disappearances...what really kind of intrigues me is once again the fact that you don't have anybody...you don't have any apparent cases...in 84....discovered... and if you had a number of prostitutes who disappeared in 84 they'd be on your list by now... Investigator: Yeah, one is on the list but right now we probably

got, because of the time, we got to put them on the list...we have some missing prostitutes...but as prolific as escorts are there, that may be a system, we keep finding a system ...can we go back to the hunt for a moment... Ted Bundy: Sure... Investigator: We might have covered this already a little bit ... how do you think he conducts it... Ted Bundy: Well, going back to my earlier... assumption that he knows...he already has an insight into this ... the kind of subculture these women are part of, he understands how it serves them in the past or he's been in the same kind of environment where they lived and worked...he understands their movements so his hunt is somewhat simplified by that fact... that he understands who they are generally and how they behave... where he can find them...and ugh... Investigator: Do you think that he parks his vehicle...and just watches...or drives up and down...makes notes of certain people walking on the highway...maybe he stops and visits with this person... later turns out she's his victim...do you think there's some kind of need for him to get to know that person? Ted Bundy: Oh, yeah...sure...[referencing the car]... I don't know about that [referencing needing to know the victim] but I ...to your earlier question, is he closely observing the scene ... I have to think this guy is in and out and closely observing his victims...if not the area particularly that they are from...for some period of time...I don't want to...I want to make sense of this theory...he's gone to a great deal of trouble to check out the area and everything that goes on and nothing ...not just the prostitutes, but the police ... he's very conscientious about the field monitoring, undercover or whatever... cause he's very conscious of not wanting anybody to observe him very closely but also because he's lived in that scene for a long enough he knows what they look like, can sense what they look like, so he's very conscious of all kinds of activity, and my guess is, generally speaking ...and I'm sure there are exceptions, where he's just driving along and he sees something he likes and it feels right and he looks around and he parks the car and I don't know how many suspect vehicles you may have on your list but I'm pretty sure he's very careful about where he puts his car but I just don't think he's the type that sells drugs at the curb and having them get in...just might be another question you've asked your ladies out there, if they've had to walk any distance to his car...is his car parked in kind of an unusual place...and that would be a pretty good indicator ... [chuckles] if he'd done all 35 just driving up to the curb I think people would have a pretty good line on him...but he's more careful than that, obviously, he's very, very, wary, you can see that not just in how he picks up his victims but how he approaches them, he may not be detected and he could have hidden them better but he's doing his best and he's learning...and he has learned...but anyway, yeah, you have a good point...he knows the area, he's looking for a

good place to park his car...he's waiting for the right kind of approach, he doesn't want anybody around to overhear what he says to the girl...he doesn't want anybody to see him if at all possible...he certainly doesn't want anybody to see him getting in the car... so all those, that's one part of it...that's the actual approach, what he's actually saying, whether there's a straight offer for sex or whether it's something more sophisticated is another question...

Investigator:

You know he's kind of gone, according to your description anyway, from the river to the woods to further out south...further out southeast...um, understanding that the river was in...one of the first victims police recognized was this series...uh, would he have been... umm ...accustomed to maybe breaking in to somebody's house and strangling them in the middle of the night type of thing...we do have some of those around...from earlier years...a couple of years previous...and they're basically unsolved...would he have said this is too dangerous this is too chancy type of thing...to be...like one's in an apartment, one's in a condo, one's in a house....

Ted Bundy

And their bodies were left there?

Investigator:

Yeah...

Ted Bundy:

Were they prostitutes?

Investigator:

Well, they were questionable women...if you want to put it that way. I mean, they go out ...they go to bars and get picked up themselves ...and guys are brought back the first night and...

Ted Bundy:

Well, he did not start with [two victims named]....I mean, I just feel that strongly...he did not just wake up to doing four or five a month...that might be something to see...what would it be like for somebody looking for the right pole for fishing and he was fishing here and there and not, maybe not only not catching much but taking too much of a risk...in the meantime, it might very well be that someone like this would break into a house and do something... I just can't rule it out...and find it so risky and so unnerving and so difficult quite frankly that he would look for something perhaps easier...and then he struck pay dirt with these younger women or these women who are on the streets...he sort of blossomed if you will...and really became much more active ... that's one scenario...

Investigator:

How about the hunt, though, I mean...is the fact that he would do one in the residence more of a thrill for him versus I see such a difference in the fact that he could go into a girls' own residence...knocking on the door of a girls' residence and she opens the door and BOOM...it's that quick and ...like in one case... is that part of the thrill that you equate with the approaching of a prostitute...

Ted Bundy:

Well, to be able to track a woman from a bar...let's say to her home...and be able to ... and in fact if he's random and not just knocking on doors ...but the question is, did he select this woman beforehand or is he just like Albert Salvo just knocking on doors...it makes a difference...but still there's timing involved

in either case...there's a certain amount of expertise...and sort of feeling out apartment complexes and looking at names on mailboxes and things is an art and if you talked to Albert DeSalvo or his spirit you'd find out that there's something of an art to it...but if in fact he tracked a woman from a bar that's a little bit more sophisticated and a little bit more difficult and like I say it does involve a little more hunting instinct...to track someone from a location to where she lives, whether it just be from the parking lot or a nearby bar or somewhere he saw her...and to be able to tell which apartment she was in...unless he knew her beforehand...there's so many possibilities...were these strangulations in the area of Pacific Highway South? Seattle? King County?

Investigator:

Yeah, Bellevue, Seattle...

Ted Bundy:

You see, you can't rule anything like that out. If you have anything unsolved involving young women in the Pacific Northwest in terms of how they are found murdered...did it occur prior to [victim]...or for that matter even recently...you got to think about this guy...cause he hasn't stopped and didn't just start with [victim]...

Investigator:

How soon do you think he started before [victim]...ten years...fifteen years...

Ted Bundy:

That's another one... I don't know...[TAPE ENDS]

Interview: Florida Prison with Ted Bundy, Dave Reichert and Robert Keppel

Date: 11/18/1984 Time: 10:25 Tape 4/Side B

Note: I do not know how to distinguish the voices as to who is Dave R and who is Robert K, so I have just transcribed the conversation as "Investigator" and Ted Bundy. Sometimes, it will be obvious which investigator is talking as he names himself or the other one present, but I still left it as simply investigator.

Investigator:

This is a continuation of the statement ... the interview with Ted Bundy...the time is 10:25.

Ted Bundy:

If he'd been doing this back like he was in July of 82, to October, sooner or later it's got to catch up to him....and my initial impression is if he is not in that activity, before [victim], not that he hadn't been trying it in the past or working up to it, but he hadn't killed anyone before. Unless he moved in from another area, because he's extremely shrewd, and just moving up to mountain country... imagine what it takes to be able to do, if in fact he did seven a month, four in July of 82, five in August, that's a lot of work...[chuckles] and avoid detection too...

Investigator:

He's got to be feeling pretty confident, pretty cocky...

Ted Bundy:

Ugh, yeah. Yeah. He's got to feel very confident in his abilities and yet, he also knows he's failed in that you can find his victims and he doesn't want you to... see, so he knows he's got to get better at it there...even though he knows he's outdistancing you. He's got a plan in his head and he knows there's a chance and he's doing his damndest to reduce his risks... and ugh, you know, I don't know, getting back to some remarks you made yesterday Dave about could he feel like he's in competition with the Task Force or you or somebody, or play, or come out, or torment you in some way...I'm sure there are some guys like that but he's not and I would hesitate to stereotype serial killers generally as individuals who get off on that. Certainly there's an amount of competition, between this individual and the police, there's just got to be...but whether he really gets off on that, or in fact that's just a benefit, it's not the main course...I mean, he's getting off on killing these women. That's what he's getting off on. And I don't feel like he's right now, really eager, to come out and taunt you or play games with you. Not to say that he might not want at one time or another, is there a lot of pressure on him? Not that he's not deeply disturbed ... as obviously he isbut he's also well controlled. So at some or other, you might have a break...it's not unrealistic to think he might call you...or write you...but that doesn't seem to be his basic thing...he's not unstable, not in a way that he's going to play a game with you right now...you might at one point get him to respond at some point because when he's doing all this he can't be conducting normal relationships with people, his whole life is upset...he might find it hard to hold a job or hard to build relationships with other people, ugh, the pressure, not to mention the fact that, not with-standing what anybody says, I'm sure there's got to be a sense of remorse. It may not be very strong, it may be stronger at other times, sometimes more than others, but all this affects him and over time...

Investigator:

You don't believe this theory some people have that there is no remorse...

Ted Bundy:

Oh no. No, I don't believe it. I don't believe that theory at all. Alcoholics have , that I've known, suffer a great deal of remorse but that doesn't stop them from drinking...you know, some alcoholics...I mean, look, here they are, they can't hold a job, their families are falling apart, and they know they're being cruel people and yet they still drink. And they feel very bad about it the day after. They can't stop themselves. And maybe, I'm sure, there are people who kill who feel no remorse, but I think it's very inaccurate to say that they all do...just because a man feels remorse doesn't mean he wants to turn himself in and be executed by the state...that he feels remorse doesn't mean he can control that deep drive or compulsion that causes him to kill...there may very well be gaps and there may very well be periods in here in between victims where the reason he doesn't is because he's just despondent...over his inability to control his behavior. Who knows...but you can't, I wouldn't, would not want to stereotype this type of individual or this type of victim, there's a possibility....unfortunately, there's only one individual, one person, and he's a real person. And he's quite capable of feeling all the range of emotion that you do and don't overlook the fact that he can come off as...in many respects he is just as normal as anybody else...he may not be, he may not be, but this guy's lasted long enough that he's not a raving maniac...he's obviously experienced in my opinion, or else if he were a kind of punk he would have made a more serious mistake. He would have made himself more obvious to you guys. This [suspect] character...and I've got some comments that you, that I'd like to discuss with you later... You get what I'm ... do you follow me?

Investigator:

Oh yeah. Uh huh.

Ted Bundy:

Don't underestimate his capacity to be plagued with remorse... in fact, I would say if you feel like you have a good victim, a good suspect...that does not know that he's a suspect...probably the best way to approach him is quickly...if he gets to an attorney, [laughs] I'm thinking like a cop...fact of the matter is if he gets to an attorney he'll more than likely be able to compose himself...because

he's a very controlled individual. But if you catch this guy unawares, and bring him in for questioning, God forbid you don't violate the Constitution, but ugh, I think you'd stand a much better chance of getting him to open up.

Investigator:

It'd be hard to violate the Constitution in this day in age.

Ted Bundy:

[laughs] Unfortunately...

Investigator:

But you do believe there's a chance this person might talk about it at some time...

Ted Bundy:

Oh sure...if you catch him.

Investigator:

Do you have to have a pattern...do you have to have something to show him before he'd open up? Or,

Ted Bundy:

You've got to make him think you know ... this is a tremendous burden he's

carrying around with him...and you've got to make him think you think he's guilty. That's a terrible thing to say isn't it, but it's a terrible case...and if he thinks that you think he's guilty, and in fact he's carrying around this terrific burden, he's going to just want to let it off...he's going to be so torn up inside he'll let it go...if he's the kind of person that I think he is...and which reminds me if you want to talk about [a serial killer] which is about related...I don't want to get much into that...[this serial killer] is in prison here...nobody had a line on him that I know of...he just came out of nowhere...and hey, I want to talk... that's my understanding...I don't know if that's what really happened... but my understanding was that he was in Florida State prison before he went to the police and said, hey I did all this...now whether it was the skill of the detective down at Daytona Beach that took him under his wing and bringing [him] along or whether [he] said sure, I'll just tell you everything...but I think of what I understand is that it may be a combination of [him] wanting to tell and somebody knowing how to get it out of him....because now [he]'s back on our wing, with three or four death sentences and he won't say anything except "hi". He finally came out of whatever phase he was in and the state of Florida in its beneficence rewarded him for his honesty by giving him four death sentences. Well, I guess that's the way the game is played...now, I think [he] is saying," hey I really didn't mean all that stuff that I told you all about...I don't know anything about it..." and that's the position you put somebody in if you bring the full weight of the state down on them...and you start reminding them that "hey, you're a gonner, but be nice to us and tell us everything..." you are sort of working at cross purposes...and it's not a situation that makes people want to talk...even though they might want to...but he doesn't do anything but as far as I know he's one of the nicest, pleasantest individuals that I've been around...and will not say "boo" about anything...that we'd say to the police. He's not like [another serial offender], [it's] a well-known fact that he'd often tell people about what they did. [That guy] was a little bit off center. He's a different kind of individual than, entirely different kind of individual than [the killer I was mentioning]... entirely different.

Investigator:

[The one killer] is making taped interviews [inaudible talking low and away from microphone] that claimed that he's seen the Lord...and talked and talked and talked...

Ted Bundy:

Well, I guess that's good. If he feels he has to do it...

Investigator:

How about... ugh ...one of the things [inaudible] something about what he'd do with the victim...

Ted Bundy:

I don't know why I thought of them, I looked at the dates, I'm not sure. For some reason, I thought the dates were closer. I see what you're saying, [names several victims of Green River killer], only because how close they disappeared and how close it appears from the information you have that these disappearances were....in the cases of two of those couples they were both black, which is kind of suspicious to me, in that they would disappear so closely together...probably he's very intense and does one and has to come back the next day and do the other...the same day...and do a second...but as I said earlier to do one he has to get the other, or maybe they're both standing and one walks up while he's talking to the other and he's so intense for that period of time at that point he needs one so bad that he's willing to take the extra risk of taking two...

Investigator:

But would he...is he killing them do you think ...together... keeping one alive and carrying the other one back...what do you think the chain of events are if he's picking up two reasonably close together...

Ted Bundy:

Well

Investigator:

Cause all we have is the two closest[victim] and [victim] their locations are different but as the crow flies less than an hour.

Ted Bundy:

I think he would have taken [victim] and [victim] separately not only because they're both white girls but because they were last seen at different places and their bodies were found at different places...they were last seen on the same day...that's kind of interesting. In that, is it possible that [victim]and [victim] hop on a bus on the streets of Pacific Highway South...has she ever been known to be down there? Was she ever known to hustle?

Investigator:

Umm... that first information is yes...[victim] one of the ones we have a composite of the last person she saw ...she was getting in a pickup truck with, but there's no guarantee that that's the guy that did it...

Ted Bundy:

The same day?

Investigator:

The day she disappeared ... right.

Ted Bundy:

What time of day do you have that she was last seen on the seventeenth?
Because [victim] was seen at ten o'clock that evening.

Investigator:

I don't think we have much on [victim] at that time...there's no time of day on here.

Ted Bundy:

The thing that struck me about [victim] and [victim] is that if in fact they disappeared from different locations on the same day not only does it indicate that this guy has an incredible need but compulsion ...you have to understand his need to do that ebbs and flows that probably accounts for the variations over periods of time and sometimes it's at the point where he has to take unnecessary risks just to do what he wants to do...he's not as rational at times as he is at others...but if I look at [victim] and say that she disappeared from downtown Seattle and her body was found a good deal south...I'd say down by Auburn...

Investigator:

She's on the mountain Cemetery road...but that's just her skull...didn't find anything else of her...

Ted Bundy:

Is that area known for predators?

Investigators:

Bunch of coyotes...curious thing about that [victim] is that her skull was found by the side of the road...

Ted Bundy:

On the shoulder?

Investigator:

By...

Ted Bundy:

Weyerhauser is right here, isn't it? This is the road that comes off by Weyerhauser, right?

Investigator:

You're close, yes.

Ted Bundy:

And then she's found over...

Investigator:

Yes, she's off the Mountain Cemetery Road that's just off ...different than the

main drag which goes off ... [victim] was last seen around 8 o'clock.

Ted Bundy:

Well, you know, if you're off by a day it makes it ...if one of your victims is off by a day it does put a slightly different complexion on it doesn't it? Obviously, it looks to me like he did one and just didn't feel like that was enough...so went back for seconds...yeah, I would say from the looks of it that it's hard to say which came first...go to Seattle and get [victim] and bring her back to Auburn, bring what's left of her back to Auburn...doesn't appear that he's decapitating them or anything ... I think the chances are the animals just dragged that skull around...and you didn't find the evidence of small bones and then he went up to a close location and somewhat closer Pacific Highway South where [victim] disappeared from didn't he? He abducted her and dumped her body down here by 2 ...that would be in the Star Lake area. He went back to a familiar location. Gosh, who can say what's going through the man's mind...to him, it's logical, there's a reason why he's doing it. That is the message to anybody looking at it, being persistent, getting a sense of it, but to him he's making sense, there's some reason why he's doing it...even...maybe there's no reason at all, he's just doing it because that's what he feels like doing ... augh...because in hindsight, the only thing that's clear is he's just trying to dispose of the bodies so that nobody will find them...that much I can say for sure...but I'd say he did them separately for no other reason than the reason that the bodies were found in separate locations and they disappeared from separate places. Fascinating that he could have done it on the same day which says something about him ... his intensity about his need to do this ... at this particular time.

Investigator:

Do you think that [victim] could have been the first one? Put in that area... Maybe he didn't like it and decided he'd come back to Star Lake...

Ted Bundy:

Well, what does this area look like? The Cemetery Road area ... is it wooded, is it, are there houses in the area or not?

Investigator:

No, there's not too many residences around there, it's very much like Star Lake...the only thing up there is the cemetery. The skull was found on the south side of the road and the cemetery is on the north side and she was found about a quarter of a mile west ...

Ted Bundy:

Is it a paved road?

Investigator:

Yes. It's a similar road to Star Lake road. It's a windy, curvy road that heads down in the valley...

Ted Bundy:

And you searched all around that area? I mean, for anything else? I mean, I'm sure you did.

Investigator:

But there's other areas ... wooded areas nearby that have nothing, not service ...

Ted Bundy:

Well, he's going back to these same places again and again and you have five missing in that period so there's every indication that those five girls are somewhere between Burien and Auburn. And any time you find one, like you say, you found other mass sites, so it would depend on how good that site looked in terms of how he was looking at it... where is it?

Investigator:

Okay...here's 320 and you can't go down Canyon Road which leads down into Auburn...so you have to go on back streets actually to get here but down here you can down and off the west bound highway ... just go right on up the hill and follow around this area ... this is all steep wooded area between this road here and highway 18...

Ted Bundy:

Well, if he's coming down from Seattle...then he's coming down interstate 5 ... he could be coming down the Valley freeway...if he comes down interstate 5 , he comes down to this interchange here...he could easily get over here.

Investigator:

You'd have to know this ... it's kind of confusing here...

Ted Bundy:

He knows it. So and then, it's somewhere around in here...you saying?

Investigator:

This looks a little off to me – it's actually right on the King County – Auburn

line right?

Ted Bundy:

Uh huh. It should be...

Investigator:

Talking about this, I want to back up just a little bit and ask you about property that we talked about before and I'd forgotten what your answer was to the question about whether or not he was keeping the stuff...

Ted Bundy:

Well, he's keeping the clothing or he's apparently leaving the area pretty well bare...and he's not leaving any clothing on the victims...I take it...you could have a variety of motivations for doing that but the one that appears most apparent to me given his behavior that I can see from this disappearance of his is he just doesn't want ...he wants to leave a minimum amount of evidence at the scene...he probably knows enough, he's read enough about cases in the newspaper, and perhaps detective magazines or wherever he gets his information... he knows about fibers, he knows about hairs, what not and there could possibly be an element that he gets off on having clothing, I don't know.

Investigator:

The reason I asked that question is somewhere between here and the Enumclaw sites we found those victims' ID. What would have caused him to throw that out the window or whoever so that they 'd end up there. Would there have been a struggle with her meaning she was alive yet or do you think he just disposed of it after he dumped her ...

Ted Bundy:

You guys know this case...I ... [chuckles] I'm impressed, you guys have been working on these cases long and hard...but I'm still impressed you know them this well...sure, you said it before I said it...the second thing that he might be doing is simply throwing the shit out the window of the car as he's driving along...that might sound a little bit weird, but that's one way to do it...there's any number of ways to dispose of the clothing, he could be burying it....or he could be burning it at home....if he has a fireplace...or a burning barrel but he might not. But this guy is going, if my sense of it is right, he's going for the quick disposal...he doesn't want to have much around at all. He doesn't want to have a body around ...he doesn't want to have the body in his car very long. And if he has that kind of mentality, he might be just jettisoning these belongings out the window as he drives along. That's not a particularly bad way of getting rid of such things because there's trash all along the highway all the time and it gets collected...have you , in these areas where you found the bodies, have you ever conducted any routine search along the highways for any distance looking for clothing?

Investigator:

Oh yeah. We're finding all kinds of things...shit. We still have a lot of distances though that we haven't covered yet.

Ted Bundy:

There's any number of places, any number of ways that he could throw it out the window. My guess is you found your ID there because he threw it out the window and not because they were struggling. And if he's doing that, that's a very sound indicator that that is one method he's employing to get rid of the stuff. He's throwing it out the window, maybe he stops someplace and he throws it down the embankment...but he might be of a frame of mind he wants to get rid of all his stuff as efficiently as possible but as quickly as possible and that means not taking any stuff home and getting rid of it quickly and he might be stopping and putting it in a dumpster somewhere.

Investigator:

He doesn't know we found that stuff so he doesn't consider it, I don't think, a mistake.

Ted Bundy:

That's a good point 'cause have you had people search up and down the roadway in the Enumclaw area?

Investigator:

In certain sections ... yeah.

Ted Bundy:

It's not unreasonable to suppose that you should find some things up there because I'm sure the number of victims, there are more victims up there. So, I had a feeling last night about that question. I was thinking about did he keep his stuff or would he keep his stuff...or not. And on the one hand, it doesn't make a whole ... I don't know how much difference it makes...on one level because either he's gonna have it when you throw down on him or he isn't and if you have a suspect just because he doesn't have anything doesn't mean he isn't a viable suspect.

Investigator:

Okay, this tape ends at 10:55.

Interview: Florida Prison with Ted Bundy, Dave Reichert and Robert Keppel

Date: 11/18/1984 Time: 10:57 Tape 5/Side A

Note: I do not know how to distinguish the voices as to who is Dave R and who is Robert K, so I have just transcribed the conversation as "Investigator" and Ted Bundy. Sometimes, it will be obvious which investigator is talking as he names himself or the other one present, but I still left it as simply investigator.

Investigator:

This is a continuation of the statement ... the interview with Ted Bundy...the time is 10:57.

Umm, one of the things that you mentioned was ... [something about he was locked up, what was he locked up for]

Ted Bundy:

Well, my initial reply was I don't have a feeling for that but I haven't really given it a lot of thought...I

Investigator:

Do you feel it's more than likely he's locked up for this or he's more than likely locked up for something that's correlated to this...

Ted Bundy:

Unrelated to something that did not ...that only went so far and didn't end in this...

Investigator:

Right...

Ted Bundy:

I mean, like burglary...

Investigator:

Yeah...

Ted Bundy:

Or a car theft...huh...

Investigator:

Why do you say car theft?

Ted Bundy:

Well, just in case, I did read that article in PMP actually did ... I knew about that...down in Portland? It sounded too rough to be the kind of character you're looking for...too rough. That's just a wild guess... that he'd be locked up for something else...and I really don't know that he would be locked up for anything else...that would not be at the top of my list as far as reasons for wanting ...it's obvious that he's used to being ...

Investigator:

Is there a reason he could stop more again?

Ted Bundy:

Yeah, things are just coming off the ...whatever's coming...as far as a radical personality change whether it be a religious experience or a moral reformation whatever you want to call it, it's not out of the question, but I think it's highly unlikely that he's coming...that he's stopped of his own accord.

Investigator:

In the notes that you wrote down, there's a triangle you noted to check out of Bellingham, Spokane, Coeur d'Alene, is there some significance to that? Bellingham and Spokane ... that you've got?

Ted Bundy:

No, I mean if I was in that position, if I needed, if I was compelled to range farther because I felt that things had gotten too hot for me at home I would ...if in fact, he was based in the Pacific Northwest ...still...in the Seattle-Tacoma area, and he has to start to range to farther areas ... I mean, Portland, Spokane, Bellingham, Everett...are the nearest metropolitan areas of any size if he's still focusing in on the same types of victims...that was the only reason I mentioned

those three...Going all the way to Spokane might be a little bit out of the question, that is a several hundred mile drive and this guy might not have the time or the money to be able to get away much and that's out of his territory, and I think he's successful up there in Seattle on Pacific Highway South because he just ... he may not have grown up up there but he just knows it...he's been up there enough that he knows it, he has a feel for it...if he starts to range far afield, he's more likely to make mistakes 'cause he doesn't have that sensitivity to what's going on...to the scene, to the presence of police ... you know, who's supposed to be there...if he goes to Portland, if he hasn't [recorder is turned off for a second per Investigator comment]

[Lunch is brought in to Bundy from the staff...group laughs and investigator says 'you owe us one'. Conversational in that Bundy talks of never seeing salad dressing...asks if they want lunch, they decline. Bundy says they gave him a little extra. Lots of group laughter.]

Investigator:

One of the things that struck us when you mentioned Spokane was, that ugh, we have... we don't know if it's a series or not, but there's five girls over a period of three years who they found in the Spokane River and they are not prostitutes... well, one is close...there are several accusations but they don't have an official record...more runaways, runaway types...

Ted Bundy:

Are they teenagers, younger?

Investigator:

Yeah...

Ted Bundy:

That is, that is not...when did they occur?

Investigator:

June of 83...that's when we found them...they were missing in June of 83... I'll send you some of the other we have on two locations...

Ted Bundy:

Yeah, I'd like to know some of theyou mentioned Pierce County and Chehalis ... is the Pierce County, people, sandbagging you? Is that what they're doing?

Investigator:

Well, I'm sure you're well aware that there are differences in the quality of resources being done in investigations ...difficult problems in cooperation...and pride of authorship of particular things...

Ted Bundy:

Hmm

Investigator:

It may ugh there may have been a task force at one time and they pulled them back...because there's more work to do there supposedly, even though [victim]

is an obvious case...and possibly the Nisqually girl too...the problem here is that it's just not on our list...because we're not going to embarrass them by putting a girl from Pierce County on our list and putting pressure on them...we want the cooperation, not the trouble...and then there's some in earlier times where it's undecided where they could be part of this or part of somebody else...you know, like, there's two young girls found in the Lake Tapps area...the skeletons were found over periods of time and there's ugh, one out by Greenwater...in Pierce County and these are from [years earlier]...and there's just not any, they are very similar in find...it's just like we're finding bones...and ugh, we've more or less, not worked on those cases and trying to dredge up an old case is like trying to pull eye teeth...and, ugh, so we just don't have the answers...about how to go about to investigate it...and you mentioned Bellingham...Bellingham had a strangled female found in the water in 1971...and we've done all we could trying not to confuse him with other cases, the best we could...and we found a similar one like that but we don't have any way of telling if they are related or not...I mean, people disappear under unknown circumstances...

Ted Bundy:

Well, I just look at this list here and you have a number of disappearances in May of...

Investigator:

There's two in May and they're close together...both went to a car...both found strangled...

Ted Bundy:

In Spokane? He was still pretty active here in May...that isn't to say he couldn't have driven to Spokane...but he didn't need to drive to Spokane in my opinion as you weren't on to him yet, they'd only found one body in April 83 the similarities in women...finding dead bodies in water is not that unusual... I was more interested in 74...any trends in disappearances you'd seen in that area,

Spokane...Bellingham... Portland...in 74 because ugh, you know it seems that he changed somewhat... something in late 73... thankfully 83...

[Bundy has corrected himself- taken in conjunction with other comments he made that serial killers often start at least a year earlier than what their first victim is that is known to police and also his later comment that he killed a hitch hiker in 1973 ...]

Investigator:

Which years are you talking about...83... 84 or 73, 74?

Ted Bundy:

No, 82 ... 83, 84 ...

Investigator:

Okay...we've gone back from 84,83,82...back ten years and discovering unsolved either female bone finds or strangulation cases where ... and we've come up with I think 58 cases that are between Snohomish, Pierce and King counties.

Ted Bundy:

Well, you've got more than one individual working that's for sure in that area anyway...unfortunately... that probably compounds the confusion ...

Investigator:

Just a hair ... yeah.

Ted Bundy:

‘Cause sooner or later you’re gonna have somebody, even if it is just coincidentally, come ...snatching a victim that was similar... or at least close enough to confuse you.

Investigator:

We’ve had that already...someone leaving girls in the Green River ...strangled too

Ted Bundy:

Not every individual does that...and gets away with it obviously... at least not for any length of time... somebody like the Green River person, has got something special going on obviously, not indefinitely mind you...it’s not something that’s going to go on forever...but he’s got something more going for him than the guy, who say, you just caught who bungled it somehow...

[Ted has just admitted he’s a serial killer and he used the words “bungled it somehow” which indicates intent so why was the theory that he was traumatized given so much weight publicly?]

Investigator:

Yeah...you know if you want to compare prostitute areas, Spokane is an important one that rivals Seattle...as does Ponders Corner...or the downtown area of Tacoma...

Ted Bundy:

Well, I think Pierce County people are missing a bet...looking at this stuff, I just think the guy is working out of Pierce County...Don't ask me why...it's the pattern of where the bodies are...[names a victim] ...those disappearances you've been telling me about in Pierce County...I think they're missing a bet... South King County is like North Pierce County...and the way the bodies are all distributed coming South, that's not necessarily going to indicate ... jumping on the freeway and dumping them as he's coming south...but they're all south, southeast of King County...and then you tell me you've got some more questionable ones in Pierce County...they ought to be...I'm sure you're looking over their shoulder...somebody should look over their shoulder 'cause this guy could very well be working out of Tacoma or Puyallup, or wherever and just coming up to an area which is so notorious as Pacific Highway South...and he's certainly not, if he is, from time to time he has got to, even though he's trying to stay out of his own back yard, I betcha from time to time he can't help himself... but just a matter of circumstances might prevent him from getting up to Seattle, or to SeaTac...and he might see a situation in his own area that he can't ignore, that he can't overlook, that he can't ... too good to refuse...that's what perplexes me about this list is that there's only one [from] Pierce County and it's [victim] ... even though I had the feeling that there should be more...

Investigator:

[Victim] is missing from Ponders Corner ...was found in the Nisqually River.
[Victim] is missing from Tacoma...as well as a Chehalis girl.....

Ted Bundy:

I don't know, it's ough ...

Investigator:

That's the one you told me about that happened in June...

Ted Bundy:

This past year in 84?

Investigator:

Yeah, right.

Ted Bundy:

That makes sense.

Investigator:

There's some variations in what we found...with [victim]...

Ted Bundy:

That's the one in Nisqually...

Investigator:

She's way out...here's the ...

Ted Bundy:

There's something going on... I'm talking about the condition of the body...

Investigator:

Very fresh...killed within hours of when she was found...

Ted Bundy:

It's within the MO of the Green River...victim...

Investigator:

Yep...

Ted Bundy:

Send me that if you wouldn't mind...that information on the Pierce County victim...that's one of the things that I'm interested in...was the possible Pierce County connection...

Investigator:

You already have [victim] on the list right?

Ted Bundy:

Yeah...

Investigator:

Assuming that the Green River Killer is timing things better...and short of stationing a police officer out near a site what would you do proactively at pickup points? Is there anything creative you can think of? We'd like to hear what you have...

Ted Bundy:

Oh yeah...do you have the type of personnel who can imitate sixteen year old prostitutes? I think Pacific Highway South is pretty much played out and I don't know how many more disappearances you have from there, but sometime in the future he's going to go...maybe Ponders Corner...or even Portland...if he feels like he's all played out in the Seattle area...and so you might want to get the cooperation of other agencies...you might want to, the obvious thing there are decoys...I don't know what else you could do other than that and surveillance and running down the license plate numbers...of every weirdo who stops and pulls out a pair of binoculars would be an effective proactive technique...

Investigator:

Are you familiar with the [precinct] people then...they had set up surveillance at prostitution pickup points...recording that like in various areas...their killer had killed like 42 times, prostitutes... which didn't ring bells at all because of the kinds of people...

Ted Bundy:

It's a good technique but it's a lot of work... this guy is just like I say, if he's coming into an area and he's coming in there often, even though he's not taking anybody out, and he must be very familiar with what he's working with ... what he's up against... and he's looking for stakeouts, he's looking for cops, and plain folks, he's looking for anybody who seems to be out of place or standing around. He doesn't want anyone to stand by watching him... but first he has to drop her

so surely even in these sites that you found there's time, one of the proactive techniques you mentioned was surfing lots of already discovered sites...one thing you have to be doing is to record license plate numbers... 'cause he's still working the same road, he's still working prostitutes and he's still active...and if he's still active, I say he's got to be somewhere else other than Seattle...or at least not the same way, not with prostitutes...I bet someday he comes back too, if he's still loose in a year or two...

Investigator:

How about the ... ough ... the significance of a reward plan...how do you feel about that...

Ted Bundy:

Well, it'd get you a lot of information, but I don't think this guy's talked to anybody...my guess is, I don't think he's talked to anybody...you would get a lot more of what you got already... a lot of people whose boyfriends or guys they picked up in bars did something weird to them...talked weird to them... behaved strangely...Hustler centerfolds hung up in the bathroom or whatever you get ... I'm sure you'd... I know, that you cannot underrate the value of having citizens call and express their fears to you...about different individuals... because of the five or ten or twenty thousand reports you get, one of 'em might be very well be your man...but how do you know that? And, on the surface, he's gonna look, even if you have the time to track him down, what I'm saying is a reward fund, I don't think a reward fund by itself will give you what you want... I think you're going to be getting the same stuff you're getting already. If somebody's going to talk to you they are going to talk to you...this is not a situation where anybody who knows something is willing to take the money...or will come forward...and the reason no one is coming forward is because nobody knows...and sure it would get you more stuff, but it would get you so much stuff that would you really be ahead? It'd get you more people calling...but you don't need that...you might get lucky and maybe it's a politically wise thing to do and maybe you will get that right call...I wouldn't overlook it but in my opinion it's not going to give you a better call on the information than you're getting

already...like anything else it wouldn't hurt.

Investigator:

We've got a case in Alaska ... [victim]...that was off in some muck...it was found ...

Ted Bundy:

You mean [suspect] in British Columbia?

Investigator:

Yeah...that's the guy... reward was high enough so the guy came forward to get the money for his family...

Ted Bundy:

That's a horse of a different color...by reward, I thought you meant reward for somebody other than the man to come forward...you know, that might be a proactive technique of a different kind...he might not be able to come forward but you might be able to put pressure on him of a different kind...leave him wondering if you think he might be weak enough or disposed toward a new insight, I think it might be asset...

Investigator:

Do you think it would make him mad?

Ted Bundy:

I think it might insult his intelligence...of his own opinion of himself as someone who goes out of his way to not get caught. And if the police are saying, call and turn yourself in and we'll give you some money...

Investigator:

What would that cause him to do?

Ted Bundy:

I don't know. The more you can disturb this guy, I think, I have two opinions of it...on the one hand it sounds kind of callous, but maybe the best thing that could be done is to get this guy to start killing again, at least ultimately, and when you start finding something...it's safe to say he'd repeat it, but if he goes underground on you then you're really up a creek. So it depends on the kind of guy he is, is he the kind of guy who loves things to be quiet, he doesn't want any publicity any more, he wants things to quiet down, then for a lack of publicity over a period of time would quiet his nerves and make him more emboldened again...where he'd start doing what he's doing again...'cause I think the publicity and the activity of the Task Force does intimidate him...on the other hand, he may be just unstable enough where you bump up the proactive activities like the super cop you mentioned or some other things or something like a reward...it's hard to say, if it would have a specific reaction, but it might ... anything you could do to make him more disordered, make him less capable of covering his tracks...to make him more nervous, 'cause a nervous man's going to make mistakes...and on the other hand a complacent man is going to make mistakes.

Investigator:

You have any suggestions on how to make him nervous?

Ted Bundy:

Well, publicity makes him nervous but pressure in a way that perhaps you don't like. It makes him inactive or it may change it...um, I was thinking last night I had a note to myself try to think of some way how to manipulate, obviously you guys I'll be honest about, what could you put in the paper that would make this guy react that you could exploit somehow? And I haven't given that a lot of thought yet. And I'm going to put a note down on my list of notes to think about as I know publicity has a powerful effect on somebody in that situation... because he wants to know, what you know...but on the other he may assume that if there's no publicity that means you don't know anything, that things are cooling down and people are forgetting, forgetting about the cases...and everything's cool...

Investigator:

One of the things we talked about was that the bodies in the river didn't work. They were discovered sites. But they worked before. Do you think that probably he has dumped in the river before?

Ted Bundy:

Many months ago, yes, my answer to that would have yes...

Tape is stopped to turn over.

Interview: Florida Prison with Ted Bundy, Dave Reichert and Robert Keppel

Date: 11/18/1984 Time: 11:25 Tape 5/Side B [tape stops at 11:52 during map discussion]

Note: I do not know how to distinguish the voices as to who is Dave R and who is Robert K, so I have just transcribed the conversation as "Investigator" and Ted Bundy. Sometimes, it will be obvious which investigator is talking as he names himself or the other one present, but I still left it as simply investigator.

Investigator:

This is a continuation of the statement ... the interview with Ted Bundy...the time is 11:25.

Ted Bundy:

I think there's a good chance he has...on one hand it's not a novel way of disposing of the body but like I say, anybody who follows the search and rescues of the summers in the Pacific Northwest knows people are searching for hunters, and fishermen, hikers and such who've been swept away in a river ...knows where there are times where they don't find their bodies...so he dumped them in there for a reason, [Ted names what they believe could be possible first victim] and company, because he didn't think they'd be found...he must have had some reason to believe in that... I don't know why they turned up in that area...it looks like they are awfully down the river... and maybe if he dumped them up, let's say up, north of Enumclaw, in that area, that stretch of water there's a chance they wouldn't have turned up...I'd only be guessing here...but it's something he either heard of somebody else doing or he'd done it himself and was successful and ...my impression was since he did four times, five times, and

four times even after one had been discovered he seemed to be evidencing some kind of belief that this disposal technique worked. And that indicates to me that he'd done it before. And it had worked...and then rivers will swallow people up...not all the time, but sometimes.

Investigator:

You mentioned south, do you think he started further south like Tumwater or someplace like that?

Ted Bundy:

He could have started anywhere in the Pacific Northwest. He could have worked between Olympia and Bellingham or Portland, it's hard to say, but because he shows such a preference to range and such a restricted area, I think it's quite possible that he didn't just start with [victim]...I mean, sure, any kinds of related disappearances of any kind of murders of young women, prior to [victim], between Olympia ... that's an easy drive... I had school or work and that's an easy drive... Bellingham is even an easy drive...Portland is a little far...

Investigator:

I saw you made a note in there that ugh serial murderers are active in the Pacific Northwest...outside the Riverman...which ones do you know of...

Ted Bundy:

That's an unsupported supposition on my part. Based mainly on the fact that over the years, when I've received newspapers or clippings in the Pacific Northwest it would be here, the bodies of young women turning up...with relative frequency...and I don't know if it is just because I am paying so much attention to the Pacific Northwest or if there's something about it...the Pacific

Northwest just seems to encourage this kind of activity....cause I know it doesn't seem to be as frequent down in this part of Florida as it is up in Seattle – Tacoma. And yet, like you said, there are 58 in the past ten years...that you know about. And the mountains of Washington offer some excellent terrain for hiding bodies, I mean, you may not find a number of bodies and even in your case you know you're not finding a large number of your bodies... a lot of it, and about there being a lot of serial murderers, there's just something to it...I just sense it, from what I know, about how difficult it is sometimes to detect a serial murder and how some serial murderers tend to be very aware of how to cover their tracks, change their MO, so you may find one victim in one place... like Lucas...and I don't think he did it intentionally, but you'd find one victim in one place in one way and another victim in another place in another way and by varying the MO a highly controlled and intelligent and alert serial murderer could go on for years and years and he might only do two to three a year or there are others like Riverman who just go hog wild...who can't just go on doing four or five or two or three a month...without drawing attention...it's just a sense of the whole problem of serial murder or multiple murders...that there are a whole mass of murderers out there who are undetected...because the way they go about it is so low key...and they're not frequent and you've found in your case, not phenomenal, but a number of exceptions...people who, were clearly killed by others... some of them you know and some of them you don't know who the perpetrator was...I just made that statement from my own thoughts off the cuff...because I feel you've got more up there than just this one guy...

Investigator:

What do you think that ...ugh ... profiling these losers, what are the profiling requirements...whether he's heading south to kill, or just not some kind of casual psychological bullshit, these are not the things that are going to tell us ...

Ted Bundy:

What I would have to say would do more with questions you might ask rather than answers...

Investigator:

Have you sat down at all and tried to work up a profile about this person?

Ted Bundy:

Oh yeah...

Investigator:

What are some of the things that you included in there ...

Ted Bundy:

Of course I will....I had to work with so little, but even then, like you say, I have a room full of information but a lot of it breaks down to this...when they were last seen and where their bodies were found...and some of the characteristics of the victims themselves...

Investigator:

We were talking a little bit about this yesterday I think, about how those profiles are something that police officers get sidetracked on and we should stick with what we know...facts and the known end of it ... we know that while it's interesting to work up a profile and see later if it will catch the guy and after what it might have been and I was just wondering what you may have listed as a profile that worked...

Ted Bundy:

It hasn't changed a lot ... some of my impressions of this case have changed

quite dramatically since I got this little bit of information that I bet you sent to me but my initial impressions were at first that this guy is young, he's more or less in the same socioeconomic kind of strata that these young women tend to be associated with ... lower middle class... let's say that he's between 20 and 30 probably closer to the twenties, he's young, that he probably has a low-paying job that restricts... he's employed but maybe only sporadically, he has a low – paying job that restricts his movement, he doesn't have a lot of money, he can't move around...

Investigator:

What race?

Ted Bundy:

White...again, this is just impressions.

Investigator:

How young is young?

Ted Bundy:

Twenty ... twenty-five. And that's only because my gut reaction is these girls are being approached by somebody really puts them at ease and they're looking and my guess is that they're not trusting anyone over thirty...my guess is that all these girls, if you sat down ... have you ever sat down and asked these girls what kind of person do you think the Green River guy is... what does he look like? How old is he? Have them give you their profile...and I'll bet you the guy would turn out to be old...and you know, maybe wearing a business suit...or maybe unshaven, or staring out of tunnels...the Henry Lee Lucas type...but I'll bet you the last person they would expect to be the killer would be one of their own

peers... that's just a guess...that's just pure speculation...

Investigator:

What do you think some of his habits are?

Ted Bundy:

Oh, sure...I think he's into pornography...I think he's into violence. That is, I don't think he'll beat up on his wife or his ex-girlfriend, or assault his teachers or anything but I think he's into violence ... into violent media...I think he would find it time to time exciting...the pornographic book shops...and some of the more violent flicks...

Investigator:

What about smoking, drinking, drugs...

Ted Bundy:

That's something I don't know... I don't get any feeling for ... you know, drugs might be one of his hooks, drugs might be one of the things he uses with these women ... because that fascinates me, once he gets a hold of 'em he doesn't let go...he doesn't lose 'em...you're talking about victims who are street wise, young women who are street wise...you're talking about some young black women who must know the streets and who could probably beat the crap out of a lot of white guys who try to do anything to 'em so he's throwing down on them real good... maybe he's using drugs to sort of take the edge off any retaliation, and you asked...I'm sure you've looked at their autopsies to determine that and you may but even that is not conclusive...um, you know he lives alone, not married ...

Investigator:

Does he have girlfriends?

Ted Bundy:

Possibly, possibly. But when he's acting up and he has to be here or there it's certainly going to put a strain on any relationship he's trying to maintain...you know, there are probably times when he doesn't have a girlfriend ...

Investigator:

You would think that that girlfriend might, would be able to catch him, think it's strange and wanting to follow this person... or is the person so well controlled that he's able to hide...

Ted Bundy:

It's possible he's been hiding it all his life... it's become part of his nature to conceal what he can...from the people around him.. as much of that as he can... certainly people around him might notice if he's not showing up for work or he's tired or restless ... he doesn't make appointments he tells people he's going to make... doesn't seem to have any money [laughs]... he's always working on his car 'cause he's using it so much. As far as like bizarre behavior is concerned, he may be acting out....toward his girlfriend, in an aggressive way...I'm sure you have a whole pile of reports from suspicious people who say their boyfriend or somebody's mistreated them...

Investigator:

Is that him?

Ted Bundy:

Well, that could explain his ability to .. one explanation for his ability to overpower or otherwise subdue the girls...I would imagine that he has to have more than just physical strength...because if somebody thinks they're fighting for their lives they're going to respond to him, produce a kind of strength that he might not be able to handle... I almost think he has to have some kind of weapon...for consider the fact, let's say I thought about girls [three victims] who disappeared in mid-83...now they all, those girls knew they damn well should have known, that there was someone out there hunting them, and at some point in time they knew they were right there...they were in the hot seat....and they were going to fight for their lives. And yet, they didn't get away. So there's a chance that, even though he may not be killing them in a brutal way - he's got to use something to intimidate them...to be effective, or to have some kind of vehicle that they can't get out of. You know, that might be interesting. Check that out someday. Any guy who's passenger door does not unlock inside...

Investigator:

How about [suspect], you mentioned something...

Ted Bundy:

I wanted to talk some more about Enumclaw and North Bend...yeah, [suspect], this is the name of the man that was a friend to the ladies of the streets, right? When did he first come to you, what period of time...

Investigator:

January of 82...

Ted Bundy:

And when was he given the polygraph?

Investigator:

September 82...and again sometime later, and he flunked them...

Ted Bundy:

Flunked them...And they asked him about each and every one of the victims up from [victim] to whomever it was, [two victims]... somewhere, I had it down...

Investigator:

Well, in 82, just the first 5 or 6 there...[victim] was not one of the ones...

Ted Bundy:

Oh, that's right. She wasn't discovered ...

Investigator:

Well, in 84, there were just general questions to any of the girls involved or who were determined to be in the Green River killings...was he responsible for their deaths...

Ted Bundy:

He didn't go name by name...you know, I told you yesterday, I had some confidence in the polygraph but nothing's perfect. And I don't know how easy it'd had been, but it just seems so unlikely that as I'm sure you know that this guy's a thorn in your side but he came to you in September of 82 and two disappeared in September, three more in October, and so on and so forth and I just can't imagine a guy getting cornered and grandstanding where he feels like you know they're on to me so I'm going to raise some hell here...and see if I can't get 'em off my back. But I can't imagine a guy just on the house doing it and then continuing to murder during a two to three month... and then skip January to February...it just doesn't fit what's emerging here on this list the way the victims are and on one hand he's gone to great lengths not to be seen and to hide these bodies and then he's in your face...and there's no reason for him to be in your face...he came to you, right?

Investigator:

He came to [inaudible]

Ted Bundy:

It's obvious he has an interest in this kind of thing ... it may be some kind of perverse interest...he may wish he'd killed some of them, I don't know. I'm sure you've had your experts examine him at least at a distance, inside and out...and I imagine you've even tried to see if some your hairs and fibers matched him...I don't know if that's even humanly possible... 'cause you don't have enough...if you get a handle on him I mean, the thing is he's such a distraction but my gut reaction is that even after yesterday when I was talking about the polygraph, there at odds end... on the one hand he doesn't fit what's happened here and on the other he messed the polygraph. So, maybe the polygraph is too general... maybe there's something just wrong with his mind...[chuckles] There's obviously something wrong with his mind...and you can't rule him out obviously. It'd be embarrassing as hell later on I'm sure...but I'm sure you've had people camped on his doorstep at time. Let me ask you this, is there any one of these murders that he can be eliminated, that he can be excluded from – is

there an alibi for any of them?

Investigator:

There's a couple...problem is, there's wanna-be people there whose alibi isn't reliable to go with you know...they're a basic pawn of anyone with that kind of mentality. I don't think she's trying to hide anything but he could be gone for a period of time and she wouldn't know the difference.

Ted Bundy:

So that's the only alibi you have...

Investigator:

There's a car too but the car shop, his verifiability of the car is questionable...

Ted Bundy:

This may seem irrelevant, but he has a number of cars he could use?

Investigator:

He's been arrested in the past and ugh his car was in the shop and he may have had the opportunity to steal a car...

Ted Bundy:

Does he run up a lot of mileage on his car?

Investigator:

Drives all the time...

Ted Bundy:

This is his car...well, he could be this weird...Have you talked to anybody about his personal habits? When you have an opportunity...the kinds of movies he goes to, the kinds of books he reads...

Investigator:

Well, he doesn't go to any movies, but he does go to massage parlors downtown and talks to prostitutes, since he's become a suspect and he is a suspect in this case...because prostitutes have turned him in...he's been to all prostitution areas downtown...

Ted Bundy:

He's gone to Tacoma?

Investigator:

Oh, yeah. And he did in Lacey...

Ted Bundy:

Lacey? That's just north of Olympia...that does not look good and that's fascinating. Who'd have thought...he's really a paradox isn't he...I don't need to

tell you that...but it's such a shame that you're distracting so much of your attention to him if he's not the one...you know, he just doesn't feel right to me to do Tacoma and come back south...

They spend a few minutes discussing highways and such on a map but the conversation is such that I don't know what they are talking about as discussion is fragmented based on what they're looking at.

Interview: Florida Prison with Ted Bundy, Dave Reichert and Robert Keppel

Date: 11/18/1984 Time: 11:53 Tape 6/Side A

Note: I do not know how to distinguish the voices as to who is Dave R and who is Robert K, so I have just transcribed the conversation as "Investigator" and Ted Bundy. Sometimes, it will be obvious which investigator is talking as he names himself or the other one present, but I still left it as simply investigator.

Investigator:

Still a continuation of the statement ... the interview with Ted Bundy...the time is 11:53. [they continue talking looking at a map, one of the investigators mentions [victim] and 410... and White River and where someone was found, also Weyerhauser Road and where it leads to Crystal Mountain...[the investigators are apparently showing him locations and giving him details of the investigation]

Ted Bundy:

Did he attempt to bury the body?

Investigator:

She may not have even been laid out yet when we found [inaudible] downstream...

Ted Bundy:

Well, the reason that area interests me is that it looks like there are a number ... or more up there...they might not all be in the same place and apparently they aren't but it's a, unlike Interstate 90, Issaquah and North Bend and even further up, North Bend from Enumclaw and Green River is more defined and not quite as opened out and it just seems like a more feral hunting ground than you would find so much activity, so many roads going off where once you get off in Enumclaw it's pretty much 410 and Weyerhauser Road...so you know, I guess, that there's some more up there. I mean, you've got to feel strongly about going up there and hunting for them 'cause ...

Investigator:

I think you were suggesting yesterday as far as Tacoma area...

Ted Bundy:

Everywhere...and looking along between Enumclaw and there for anything thrown out the window...or even between, I don't know it's hard to say, [he wrestles with what sounds like a map], when you're going back ...

Investigator:

68 is there...no that's north...seventy....

Ted Bundy:

Yeah. Now, if he's going to Tacoma, he's coming down this way...he's going to go this way....if he's going south you might want to check out this side of Enumclaw where there's a long stretch of roadway with scattered areas of woods and farms and whatnot...he might want to get some distance away before he

starts throwing stuff out the window...if that's why he's doing it and it appears he's done that in the past...at least once and there's a good chance he's done it again...so if he's going south and if I had to choose between south and north, I'd say he was going south...toward Tacoma/Lacey...he'd go this way...it's the quickest way really to get to either of those areas...in my experience. If you go out this way but I just don't see that happening.

Investigator:

You could take this which takes you to Black Diamond toward Kent, and Maple Valley, he'd be heading toward 405...

Ted Bundy:

If you could just get somebody to drive along this road, this road, if he's going north...there are two ways I remember driving back to Seattle from Enumclaw, and the way I preferred, I'd have to see the big map, I think it would be this way...rather than going up north through Kent...this one goes most directly to Auburn...doesn't this go to Auburn? 164 goes to Auburn? And then you get on the freeway in Auburn and go up to Interstate 5 and back up to Seattle up the Valley Road...but anyway, there are ... this guy had several months between Abernathy and the time you set up the Task Force and all those other bodies which really spooked him...he had four or five months where he may have been concentrating dumping his bodies up that way...that is, on 410, Enumclaw...it was working for him...and the fact that you found a third one doesn't really fit anybody yet that you know of...it's an indication that there's probably maybe more up there that he may have brought up before...Okay, now the North Bend [they all start looking at maps, I can hear the map rustling]

Investigator:

[In reviewing all the roads, the investigator mentions Taylor Mountain as he's going over landmarks... the conversation is so oriented at this point or seemingly so, to what they are looking at that I did not transcribe it...what I can

hear is too disjointed]

Ted Bundy:

Where is Interstate 90?

Investigator:

Here's Interstate 90...highway 18...[not clear on name of the road] Road is right in here...

Ted Bundy:

It runseast?

Investigator:

Right...

Ted Bundy:

Huh...

Investigator:

It's a dirt road...

Ted Bundy:

Huh...and that's about what, 2 or 3 miles in?

Investigator:

Yep...

Ted Bundy:

And that's where [victim] was found?

Investigator:

It's the one from '76...

Ted Bundy:

Okay...

Investigator:

Then we have one that was found [inaudible]

Ted Bundy:

And...that's what...[victim]?

Investigator:

We don't know who that is...not identified yet...

Ted Bundy:

You got bones...

Investigator:

[victim] and the other bones were found up here...further down I-90...exit 38... before you get to ugh the last exit before Snoqualmie Pass...they've got a new exit up there ...up near where the abandoned air field was...you know the field there?

Ted Bundy:

Uh huh...Regency Field [hard to understand, something like that]

Investigator:

Yeah...okay, slightly west of that is exit 38...really the old highway, the exit there comes back ...but they're both off the little pull-off off of that highway...

Ted Bundy:

Have you looked up north of this intersection?

Investigator:

On highway 18...follow it up here? It goes up to Echo Glen...

Ted Bundy:

Echo Glen is over here, right?

Investigator:

It comes up here and it ends up here somewhere...

Ted Bundy:

Okay...it actually comes up and over like this...but up north here there's a dirt road...a series of dirt roads and dump areas...

Investigator:

Right...

Ted Bundy:

Makes it pretty handy ...to the freeway. It's better than this area which is hillside ... but up here there used to be a lot of dump stuff...and there's new housing, at least new housing here up north...and another dirt road that goes up even higher...it's a two-tiered area and there's another area of clearing...and that exact dirt road continues on up to these two. Anyway, there's lots of areas up through here but since you found one there you know ugh, I'm sure you don't have the personnel to be running down every possible site but if that person has been active there, who knows what other tracts he may have for that area...even a more secluded one...just north...

Investigator:

So, what do you think about him coming back out again since he's picked his people up in Seattle and he's come out here again and he's got another body... you think he goes and he picks her up and he...

Ted Bundy:

Well, if he's going south like I think he is, the best way to take 18 to Auburn... and go along this way...and you might be looking for clothing along I-80 and along here... south toward Auburn...I mean again...

Investigator:

Several of those areas are always picked up by those juvenile job corps people... and you see sacks piled alongside the road...so whose ever is there, might be drawn to do that along there...or do they just do I-90...No, they're doing 405, I-90 and I-5...there's a chance they're not going to do that...

Ted Bundy:

Yeah, course you're talking government cases that are several years old...

Investigator:

The highway cleanup – we might want to do that when we found fresh...

Ted Bundy:

No question, sure. Any time you find something relevant or fresh. He has to get a feel of course for which way he's going and he's not going to be throwing them out right away... probably be surprised how close he is when he's throwing them out the window...if that's one way of exposing him and it looks like that's certainly one of the more obvious ways and it's something that ordinarily would be fairly effective...unless you came by to sweep up...one of the things that perplexed me about this was here, that I don't think I mentioned was, the [victim] disappearance...seems to be out of character...since it's interesting it's in the general vicinity in which the body was found...and it shows...I don't know if it's an accurate representation of it or not,

Investigator:

I'll show you where she is...she's between....she's southeast of 34, so she's... oh, here it is...southeast 244...probably right in here...

Ted Bundy:

Close to Cedar River...okay, any houses in that area?

Investigator:

It's wooded...a dirt road in there...a prostitute found in Black Diamond... doesn't that say, "see map 57?" Yep, 62...she's found southeast 183she was found off the road near a creek which runs right into the Green River. Here's the creek which follows the road here...she was found between the road and the creek. Steep, steep bank here.

Ted Bundy:

This is 18 and this is...it's off 18 or the Auburn ...

Investigator:

It hooks up with 18 here a few miles down the road ...

Ted Bundy:

What about that site, number 25, the one you showed me, that was just at the intersection of 18 and 90...do you have any photographs of that...

Investigator:

There's a parking area in there where it's obvious that people park and the fact that people would get rides into Seattle and park their car there and then off of that area 32, is where the bodies were found...

Ted Bundy:

Is it level ground? Hmm...

Investigator:

What's next on our list here...what about [suspect]? Back in 1973, he came in on a cold case we had in King County and wanted to provide some information on that case...not a prostitute, but she was found in Millersylvania State Park...and he wanted to offer some information on that case too...

Ted Bundy:

Huh...and he's from that area, he's from Lacey and Millersylvania is just to the

side of Olympia...

Investigator:

Do you think there's any chance that people like this would offer information about their own case?

Ted Bundy:

Yes, sure there is. It's hard to figure, unless they felt like somebody was getting close and I can't imagine...you know, if this man has been active in the area and active since 1973, and then all of a sudden he takes off with [victim] and company and he's doing 3,4, and 5 a month and that shows such an intense drive and how controlled over that period of time and just unleash it and then control it again...he would be an extraordinary individual here you're dealing with...to have the ability to be so controlled and avoid detection for 10-12 years at least and then do and then be the person who did the Green River Case and then shut it down again you know it's certainly very, very, unusual. [he moves in closer to the tape recorder] Excuse me, I didn't mean to move so far away my voice doesn't pick up well on tape recorders..

Investigator:

It's a long time. We've got other female deaths along then though not in the nature of this Green River guy.

Ted Bundy:

Have any of them lost any blood before they were dumped, can you tell?

Investigator:

Lost any blood before they were dumped...what do you mean?

Ted Bundy:

Were they injured in such a way that they would lose a large amount of blood before they were dumped ...

[Note: this comment is interesting because in the case files, at least two of Bundy's victims, per their autopsies, had significant blood loss by a very specific and unusual method. Makes one wonder if Ted is trying to find out if they had discovered this technique in his victims or if they had found a victim of his that he is not sure they have found yet...neither investigator reacts or presses him on it yet at this time, in 1984, this information about the blood loss in the victims was known to police per the files]

Investigator:

I doubt it...

Ted Bundy:

Has he checked his registration on past vehicles – has he owned a number of vehicles in the past few years?

Investigator:

Oh yeah, I've checked. I've checked for any vehicles in use.

Ted Bundy:

Have you ever attempted to, I don't know how you could do it, to vacuum his vehicle or obtain samples of hair and fibers from any of the vehicles?

Investigator:

Yeah, we got one done.

Ted Bundy:

Anything match?

Investigator:

Well, we're still in process of doing some of the stuff... but no matches yet.

Ted Bundy:

That's not necessarily really an indicator of anything especially 'cause he can't steal cars...with all the cases, with all the fibers you have, something should show up, accidentally ...

Investigator:

Do you think this guy could have started as early as 72, 73, 74 by placing the bodies of his victims on land? And then gone to water?

Investigator:

I noticed something else when we were going over it last night and we're pretty sure that he probably used the river thing because it worked for him or somebody had told him about it and he thought it was a good idea and it'd probably work...do you think 73 or 74 he could have used the land instead?

Ted Bundy:

Oh sure. And for some reason, started...because he'd heard about it...or tried it and it worked, or was a variation of something he read about...yeah. All through here...he'd have to be pretty good to survive that long and very well controlled...but the guy in Green River case just explodes sometimes, he just explodes...that's not to say that people with that kind of acting out behavior don't go through changes over time and have periods where they are more intense than others...because they do. You're talking over several years...has he been in the area the whole time?

Investigator:

He did leave for a short time on two or three different occasions...and there were times of course where he got caught by vice and he'd have to stay in...

Ted Bundy:

That's what I was saying...Pacific Northwest, unfortunately, has more than its share of that kind of thing...ugh, he is a puzzle isn't he...every time you say something more about him it's clear he's ...

Investigator:

He's forty-four years old too.

Ted Bundy:

Well, if he's been doing it for a while...he's been doing it for a number of years...so it's quite clear he's pretty good at it...I mean, if he's been doing it for that length of time...but what I see of the Green River Man is somebody who's experimenting...I mean, you'd think that what's his name, [suspect], would have it down by now...I mean, after ten years who knows, that by trial and error if he would have survived that long he's got to have a good technique and he's got to have a good way of disposing of the bodies...and after ten years he should have had a favorite technique or two...

Investigator:

He should have had [victims] and go out and kill 'em in the woods rather than dump 'em in the river...

Ted Bundy:

I'm sure that over the years, it may have occurred to him to dispose of the bodies in the river...and maybe it worked...he should have known that close to civilization there's a good chance the bodies would be found...

Investigator:

You had another question there?

Investigator:

One of the questions I had was does this guy have any sorts of paraphernalia of any sort? Is he a collector like a shoe fetish guys ...shoes, not only of dead victims but of live ones...he'd assault them and knock them out and keep their shoes and cut 'em up and drop 'em in the river...is that a necessary part of his

framework?

Ted Bundy:

I would say it's not necessary. That's not to say that people don't have their fetishes and don't collect things, and maybe clean house every once in a while. But I don't think it's necessary and ugh but I'd say everybody's different. And when you finally run up on your man and find and if you found a house full of stuff, then you've really got him. If you don't find it, then it doesn't mean that he's not your suspect. Just because he doesn't have anything it may in fact mean that it appears here he is somewhat fastidious, at least as fastidious as he can be. But he could easily have a fetish of underwear or stockings or shoes ... that's something of a ...that would be a true wild guess. Dealing with such a unique individual, who knows what it is that sets him off...specifically. Generally, what set him off are young, teenaged prostitutes, but beyond that, whether he likes to keep a photograph of them or collect newspaper clippings, whether he gets off by going back to the sites and molesting corpses or whatever any number of different things that might be part of the pattern of the ritual...in the most general sense, nothing religious necessarily. It's part of his syndrome that he's caught up in, which is evolving over time too and changing as he changes...just as everybody changes but it may be a fetish, it may be a necrophilia, it may be any number of peculiar things...is there any indication that the man has been back to the sites where you have whole bodies to see if the bodies have been disturbed post mortem?

Investigator:

Nothing to indicate that...it's possible on the River...[one victim] in the river and [another victim], in the place she's in and a place close to where she is ...I don't know if she was about Thursday, or if they both ended up in the river at the same time...we don't have any information about that.

Investigator:

Oh yeah, he's come back for [another victim]. There're some post mortem things he's used that we know of.

Ted Bundy:

Reason I ask is 'cause you know is this guy is responsible for 20 to 30 or more deaths at least and there's a certain aspect of possessiveness I think that's working at this guy in rather plain terms...possessiveness where the corpse could easily be as important as the live victim in some respects. It's a physical possession, an ownership, a taking...if you will, that is part of the syndrome. Which originates from I think a sense of power and ownership and ugh which is one of the reasons why I think in certain cases, not all, certainly, some and I think this might be one of his, why I think he might an individual who'd tend to return to the scene...to check on his victim or in fact, even, interact with the body in some way.

Investigator:

You're saying this would occur before we find it...

Ted Bundy:

Generally speaking...yeah, generally speaking...but I wouldn't ...I thought about it last night and you definitely have a good point. If ...now there are the arsonists who've just burned down buildings and run off...and there are the arsonists who burned down buildings and like to watch the firemen put out fires...and who knows, there might be a side to this man's where he gets off seeing you guys' cars parked beside the road and crawling on your hands and knees in the bushes.

TAPE ENDS.

Interview: Florida Prison with Ted Bundy, Dave Reichert and Robert Keppel

Date: 11/18/1984 Time: 11:53 Tape 6/Side B

Note: I do not know how to distinguish the voices as to who is Dave R and who is Robert K, so I have just transcribed the conversation as "Investigator" and Ted Bundy. Sometimes, it will be obvious which investigator is talking as he names himself or the other one present, but I still left it as simply investigator.

Investigator:

This is the continuation of an interview with Ted Bundy, time is 12:25.

Ted Bundy:

You seem troubled, am I boring you?

Investigator:

I was just thinking about post mortem activities and you seem absolutely sure that he's not coming back once we found the body...our capability of monitoring a dump site for long enough afterwards is not really possible...it's probably more possible than nonhuman capabilities than other things...and I just wonder how fruitful you thought that would be...

Ted Bundy:

I don't understand what you just said...

Investigator:

Monitoring it afterwards....if we have a site along the roadside, here....somebody's discovered it and processed the area and we're long gone... that's a different concept than us being there and him driving by while we're there...do you think coming back to this area would freak him out ...

Ted Bundy:

Several months later...so he feels safe....cause if he's there, chances are you haven't found everyone...and there's a good chance where you found only one there's more than one...and you said yesterday that he buried, you found one buried and the others were above ground...it very well may be that the reason you haven't found some of the others is that they were buried...it's more difficult of course to find those...if animals haven't dug them up...they're more difficult to find...and he might want to come back to an area...so I would take a look at your lists and see the sites most likely are that, where somebody hasn't been discovered...for instance, a guess here, it occurred to me and I don't know why, I was just looking at the maps and I saw what was in a site where [two victims] ugh, the killing of [inaudible] might be 12 but I don't know why I felt that way...but there's a good chance there are some more there...down by Star Lake...or maybe better down by Auburn where you only found one...so just picking a site that you felt has potential or where you didn't want to spend days on your hands and knees trying to find something else...and monitoring it...and I think that there's a fairly good chance that if there's somebody left, that he'll be back...that if there's somebody left and you're long gone as opposed to you know actually trying to get in your face to look at the site...I don't say no one would do that though...there are some people who get off on doing that but not this guy.

Investigator:

How about if we haven't found them all up along 14?

Ted Bundy:

Oh yeah, that's where I'd say right now, it appears he's spread them out up there...and not all in one place, so for instance, it's not that he won't return to an area once it's been discovered, for instance, you found [victim] in September of 82, and he came back just about 10 blocks away to dump 3 more...it looks like 10 blocks away...from the address there...so it's not like he won't come back to an area...but the exact same spot, that might be something else again...but an area, so sure, you've got ski season coming up and you're going to get a lot of traffic up there...not in the too distant future, but it's going to be hard to separate the wheat from the chaff but with all those going up there skiing, but your fellow might not be so smooth as to as to put the skis on top of the car ...the thing is, you know, if he puts his skis on top of the car, and drives by at 7 in the morning and comes back down at nine, if he goes up at 7i he's not going to hang around at Green River wherever, just for the next ten hours just to come down and make ... he's not going to hang around. It's cold. He doesn't want to ski or whatever the hell it is – he wants to get back to business. Your people might see him pass at 7 or 8 and come back at 9 again, but even with skis on his car that would look really weird. If you start seeing that same car it would be weird over a couple of months then you might have something. I think sites by Enumclaw have the most potential but that kind of proactive ... that kind of technique... will work over the kinds of hands and knees types of searches in suspect areas...there are more out there...it's clear there are more out there...it's hard to say, they may all be between Enumclaw and Green River. There's a lot of space up there, but not so much you can't handle. The roadway, much of it, is between the river and the mountains. The River on the left as you're going up and on the south as you're coming down. There's not a lot of room to move around except off the side roads and they're fairly obvious. Some of them are gates crossings...and some of them don't like up by past the Green River there used to be the section where there were the summer homes. And the mountainsides are honeycombed with second growth coming in...it may be ready to harvest by now. There are lots of side roads up north of Green River...both north and south, across the river and up into the mountains. There are lots of roads there. Just north, there might be another river to look at.

Investigator:

What do you feel about the way this guy's doing whatever he's doing before he was found at this ...was he likely doing this kind of contact with these girls – was he a street person? It seems to me that without a vehicle, a guy would not be that familiar with the area.

Ted Bundy:

Sure, cars ... that's what you'd be looking for. And behavior. Lurking behavior... which is exactly what he is doing. I'm not saying he's out peeping in windows or anything ...he's already gone far beyond that stage...he could be arrested or just have had contact with them....the police haven't seen him but obviously lots of people have seen him, countless thousands of people, and... sometimes you get a cop, a field cop like we talked about before, somebody out in the field, who can go to a hot spot...and he doesn't ask anybody, he doesn't hang around anybody he doesn't know...he doesn't look out for field cars and he doesn't do anything out of line except maybe spitting on the sidewalk and sometimes those are the most valuable for nothing...someone will catch this guy entirely by surprise. But if he's just lurking around and trying to observe certain behavior in these women, he's not likely to be doing anything illegal...unless he's hiding in the shadows and he's kind of obvious I don't know but he's good I mean he's certainly used the shadows a million times so I think if you check the field cars for single males making suspicious behavior ... suspicious prowlers, burglars or whatever ... you know, we keep talking about organizing the loose ends like the stuff we talked about yesterday, a young man twenties to thirties, hanging around Pacific Highway South in a car and it's a little bit far out but there's only so many things you can do... I'm sure you've checked all your arrests for indecent exposure, prowling and groping and all that kind of stuff, right?

Investigator:

We checked and we got lots of records but being able to do an investigation on

each one is another question...

Ted Bundy:

Well, you have a computer running right? It sounds like your man will appear on more than one list...that'd put you closer to the answer....there's a good chance your man is on your list but you've got thousands of people on the list ...sure, there's a good chance he's been reported but there's also a good chance that he's not...once you get more than one you can start developing alternatives and then match them and go through it and then you start to have something ...reported here, arrested here, car license plate shows up over here...the kind of stuff like you're talking about and more sophisticated...

Investigator:

When we were going through victims another one came up...she was actually found near Mt. Baker...and there's another case, a 74 case, she was found over [inaudible] but this is a case that [suspect] interjected himself into...anyway, you're aware of what our MO is ...we've got prostitutes and we've got strangulations...and some are in the river and some are on land...and I've got a few photographs that were taken back there in 73 so and that's one of the reasons I asked you that question about whether or not Star Lake could have bodies on land was because of 1973...and the interesting this according to their investigation is that she was last seen on 90th and Aurora which is a very high prostitute area...

Ted Bundy:

Well, interesting her...where was this body located?

Investigator:

She's about 10 miles southwest of Olympia...5 miles west of I-5.

Ted Bundy:

Off a dirt road ... how far off the road?

Investigator:

Not far from a parking area...he didn't have to carry her too far she was dropped on the field...

Ted Bundy:

Hmm....there was not attempt to conceal the body...there are clothing...that's a strong individual...to be able to rip and possibly cut those jeans like that...I guess I haven't been there...when I was a kid my parents used to ...we used to go there all the time.

Investigator:

This one's ... Margaret McKinney park... southwest of Olympia...there's others but overall we have to get a picture of what the areas are like...she was picked up in Seattle,

Ted Bundy:

Huh. That would've been 73...

Investigator:

Uh huh...around Aurora...December 17th...

Ted Bundy:

Well, the obvious presence of clothing is that this guy can change and will change as he found out, discovered, what works and what doesn't ... the way the jeans are cut, well that's not...

Investigator:

What is your impression of whether the guy could've done something like this?

Ted Bundy:

Sure he's keeping 'em, he's capable of it...he's had ten years to change and change his MO and whatever you call them, his fetishes, or his fantasies will change over time too, so he might be taking the girls' clothes one year at a time or not...he might be subjecting them to a certain type of abuse one year and change over time...

Investigator:

What do you think was going through his mind back then...at least Thurston county feels they may have some killed who were minors at least by the same person...let's say the person in Thurston did this one, but like you say, he goes on about his business...what would you say was going through his mind back then just from your questions and the photographs...that are in front of you... black and white photographs of the scene and what do you think was in his mind when he was doing this back then?

Ted Bundy:

Well, there's not much to work with.

Investigator:

The cut... tornthe cut pants...

Ted Bundy:

The cut pants are bizarre...is there any semen or any other marks on the body?

Investigator:

No.

Ted Bundy:

The cut pants are really odd...you know, why? I would assume he performed some sort of sex act... either before or right after he left her there...and then came back and ripped her pants in order to do that but it's a little hard to figure. I mean, he didn't have to hurry...he obviously had control of the situation...so, that's a little bit bizarre. This victim was strangled?

Investigator:

Uh huh. They're so close to Lacey you know...he was living in Lacey at the time...she was discovered and also, she was last seen getting into a yellow pickup truck like the type that a [suspect] owned... a pickup truck and it matched the descriptions...there were times when [this person] owned a yellow pickup truck. Plus, [this suspect] thought about writing a letter to the Thurston

County people saying I'd like to offer my services and apologies and while in prison, in custody there, I tried to figure out how to get some help so I didn't have to do this...so all this stuff combined makes him a suspect.

Ted Bundy:

Which it does...but he's sort of an enigma in my eyes...unless he confesses it looks like you're stuck. Whoever would come forward like that is [inaudible]... to come back and back again, he's got a real thing where he's fascinated by this kind of thing...and that is by itself a pretty good clue...I mean, sure, not everybody who's interested in homicides is a killer...but a guy who goes to that lengths, and then comes back, like he did in the seventies, and in 82, but he changed over time, he's doing things the same way, ... was this victim assaulted?

Investigator:

You mean sexually?

Ted Bundy:

Yeah.

Investigator:

I don't think so, that we know of. There's no physical trauma to the areas that you usually find...and she didn't have semen or anything ... no lacerations or abrasions...and ugh, according to the autopsy report, there was a small laceration in one area.

Ted Bundy:

Well, it fits into a general pattern. This man is interested in solving cases and [the demise] of young women...I don't know...I guess you'll have to get pretty creative looking at this point in time...I'd like to give it some more thought and maybe ...cause it's different when you don't have anybody to work with as you know, you don't know how to get a handle on it...try to get inside his head or anything and you've had your best people look at him I'm sure and stake him out and follow him...does it bother him a lot when he's put under surveillance?

Investigator:

Well, if it's an old bird tailing him when he goes out for coffee or that kind of thing... he writes complaints and complains about it...but he enjoys the attention...

Ted Bundy:

Doesn't sound like the guy...this guy doesn't enjoy the attention...

Investigator:

There's things in the paper too... he claims he knows the River victims...

Ted Bundy:

All of 'em? Can he in fact give you any information about them, about any of them?

Investigator:

All of them. Well, he'll say things like ugh well I met her down in front of Steve's grill...and ugh, and I was driving [around] and she was an experience

type of thing...[one person] lied to us ...I mean really, but she could have gotten in...It was June 17, 1974. She was found about a week later. That's the list we're up against...we've got that stuff from 71, all the way through...

Ted Bundy:

This pattern here, even though everybody changes over time, somebody just took off...they may have started slow but took off like gangbusters and then they cooled down and there's no way you can rule out your [potential suspects] and that's gotta be tough. I'd like to give some thought to it...are there any other issues in that big book you're looking at?

Investigator:

This book here includes photographs of victims prior to that...

Ted Bundy:

Ok, I have a small color ...

Investigator:

And this here is the [inaudible] this house is near the airport...

Ted Bundy:

Okay, yeah, that's in the [victim] territory...I couldn't imagine when I first heard about this where he could have put them...

Investigator:

She was discovered ...this is level ground...but the rest of it isn't. But she's ... look at all this junk right there...she's just buried.

Ted Bundy:

What kind of soil is that? Is that peat and is it thick?

Investigator:

It's pretty well packed.

Ted Bundy:

What'd the guy use...is he carrying around a pick and shovel?

Investigator:

Probably used just a shovel.

Ted Bundy:

It's an anomaly.

Investigator:

And then there's a Star Lake case...this is [victim], not much to see just bones, broken...a few miles south of 18 or highway off of 18...she's put right over the

edge...

Ted Bundy:

Which direction is this located?

Investigator:

That's north and east.

Ted Bundy:

And how far off the road?

Investigator:

Well, the body off of [this road] is about ten feet...

Ted Bundy:

He didn't feel he had to go to any extreme lengths to hide that one...is that some clothing there?

Investigator:

Yeah. Some clothing was left...the one that's ten blocks away she's is around a road you can drive in...a dirt road...all the way in back here...off 18 south, goes all the way back in, but a change here, [victim] ...[fades out as end of tape].

Interview: Florida Prison with Ted Bundy, Dave Reichert and Robert Keppel

Date: 11/18/1984 Time: 12:56 Tape 7/Side A

Note: I do not know how to distinguish the voices as to who is Dave R and who is Robert K, so I have just transcribed the conversation as “Investigator” and Ted Bundy. Sometimes, it will be obvious which investigator is talking as he names himself or the other one present, but I still left it as simply investigator.

Investigator:

This is the continuation of an interview with Ted Bundy, time is 12:56.

This is the main road, the same road, [rustling of maps] this is the famous Green River...and here you have the meat plant...start up again, time is 12:56 [they shut the tape off on purpose for about 55 seconds, I don't know why – they were talking about a specific area]

Ted Bundy:

There's a sandbar or something coming down...

Investigator:

Yeah, she was probably caught...and it turns here along the side and that grass is high enough that you can't be seen...from the other side...or practically, if you start down here with [victim]...

Ted Bundy:

There's a house Is that a trailer?

Investigator:

House, yeah.

Ted Bundy:

I'm assuming it was light out.

Investigator:

Certainly it was. And that's, how far is that... 400 yards...

Ted Bundy:

Well, I don't know...it's some distance away. He may not even have noticed it because maybe it's so late at night all the lights are off. The current is really slow?

Investigator:

The water is pretty low this time of year...

Ted Bundy:

[victim] She'd been placed there intentionally?

Investigator:

Yeah.

Ted Bundy:

Which one's this?

Investigator:

[victim]...

Ted Bundy:

Yeah, well you figure something's out there... 'cause he's working on something... that was the first one after, no it's the second one after [victim] was found... this guy doesn't like to mess around...

Investigator:

Then, we have ummm... he's been careful trying to photograph scenes around this one...

Ted Bundy:

[laughs] she's still got some clothing on... strangled with the [implement]?

Investigator:

We don't know if that's the actual device he used or if it is just tied...

Ted Bundy:

And that's the one that sort of stands out from the crowd? Where is that located in terms of this aerial photo? Remember, you were curious as to why he would dump that one...

Investigator:

Well, it was there above where he's trying to photograph...right at the turnout...

Ted Bundy:

He was photographing [victim] right...no, which one was he photographing...

Investigator:

[two victims] were found in the river about the same time by a rafter...[victim] was down the bank and they found [victim] on the bank...

Investigator:

[they spend time talking to Ted about stuff on the map, like turnouts and where the house is...] Down here is where we were finding [another victim]...

Ted Bundy:

He comes out earlier, he's losing daylight, he dumped her...

Investigator:

Some of these others, this is [victim]...and she's in this area where the house is found...basically, I don't know if this picture shows that house...right next door, over here, there is a house that somebody lives in...but behind these houses are mostly blackberry bushes...it's so far down there's probably not a lot of activity ... they are all old couples, not a lot of children...

Ted Bundy:

And again, it's late at night, the lights are off and he's ...he's not scouted the area and it might be a case where he hadn't scouted the area beforehand...it was more or less a quick drive-by. Not all these cases did he have a chance...he's obviously under some pressure...and maybe panicked, something may have happened...he's just trying to get rid of the bodies...as quickly as possible.

Investigator:

[victim] is off on Star Lake Road...we weren't finding much other than this... this is what the road terrain looks like...it's a dirt side road that you enter to pull out on.

Ted Bundy:

Yeah, he's holding true to form...

Investigator:

There was another unidentified body in this ball field...which is real close to where [victim] is dumped, about ten blocks...but she's just in the blackberry bushes...and its relatively undisturbed at night, he'd probably drive right in and right over...

Ted Bundy:

That's probably something he'd seen beforehand...

Investigator:

Sure. This is kind of an amazing thing because when he did this one he pulled off on the side ... this is really steep and kind of treacherous and there's rocks and mud and everything going down and he either toted her down the hillside ... oh probably a hundred yards. You can see where the car was in the area in the dirt area...

Ted Bundy:

Hmm...yeah, he's gone out of his way. How much did she weigh?

Investigator:

I don't remember, but not very much though...she's a petite woman... [victim] is in the same area...

Ted Bundy:

Well listen, what I'd like to do now that I have a feeling for this is to answer a lot of these questions that you've been asking and talking about and I think I can do a better job writing more complete and more concise and a more coherent kind

of answer than you've been able to...than I've been able to give...

Investigator:

Can you use the telephone, do you have a telephone?

Ted Bundy:

The only telephone that works here...if somebody wants to speak to me they have to go through a superintendent who makes , who sets up phone calls...and I walk to a phone at their convenience that they can find and make a fairly quick ...

Investigator:

Then you can call...

Ted Bundy:

I can't ... I'm not allowed to...under any circumstances...speaking to attorneys or people in official positions, they have to call me first or if there is a death in the family then I am allowed to call home, something like that. And I find it much more productive and interesting to deal with your questions and if you just want to on the way to work put a whole bunch of questions on the tape recorder and hand it to a stenographer and have them typed up and mail them to me I'd like that. I think I can handle them better if there's time to put it in writing...in a different way than I can ...I can't just talk about them ... maybe it'll work, maybe I can provide some kind of assistance...or not...I hope so...

Investigator:

Not knowing what about policies and procedures ... what in the world is your status here, what stage are you in...

Ted Bundy:

Well, ugh, I'm on death row...what's happening to me now is legally, one case has been ruled on by the Supreme Court...and the second case is still before the court...the Supreme Court...and we're in the process now of determining ...the Supreme Court is determining the issue of hypnosis is being looked into as you know hypnosis ...

Investigator:

Have you read of the recent cases up in Washington?

Ted Bundy:

No I haven't...all the decisions are made at the state level...California, some have restricted it in one way or another...so we'll see, we're looking to see what the other case does...the Chi Omega case is the one that's been ruled on...

Investigator:

What are the "ifs" and "buts"...say if the Lake City case comes out in your favor where does that affect your Chi Omega case?

Ted Bundy:

Well, it complicates matters some...for the state as they'd have to retry me...or if they don't retry me something else...but it doesn't directly affect the Chi Omega case...there's an excellent chance that the Lake City case is decided first

but that doesn't mean that they can't retry me...because intense amount of publicity and all those other things...um ... so I don't know, it would have a bearing on how the other case is handled down the road...I'm not sure what...

Investigator:

I'm sure you're well aware we'd like to talk to you sometime about ...down the way at your mercy ... we might be able to instead of playing games or doing things ... we know that we're probably find out about those pieces basically where you'd tell us anyway...someday. And when you reach that stage where it is a possibility...I don't know what the possibilities are of how you'll handle it but we're patient, we're all in the same game...and we work on the same concepts ... I definitely want to speak with you the events...

Ted Bundy:

Sure...

Investigator:

And it's not anything that ugh ... I just think from a personal standpoint and from the families standpoint we need some resolution...and with the confusion that exists with this Green River case is monumental... paired with the confusion of 1974 and we had multiple sites and not knowing if they were related or not, and then there was another one, but now when we're beginning to look at the past and have some recognition and I'm trying to help this VICAP center get set up in Washington DC and pattern recognition theories and I think they would be ...it would be invaluable to them someday...it slays me every time they talk about VICAP and it being a serial murder tracking program and they say it could have caught Ted Bundy and it's just a bunch of talk...

Ted Bundy:

You don't need a computer to tell you that you've got somebody involved in the Green River case.

Investigator:

That's right. Where our problem lies though is maybe that would help...but it goes to Los Angeles and those guys down there have a hundred twenty something dead females in the last five years...and I don't know how many of those are prostitutes, probably most of 'em, how do we know that there is a connection short of physically going through every page... and if we had a center where those cases were in and we were able to determine in a short time which were connected it would save the work of one person going through hundreds of these cases 'cause you can go throughout the United States and find dead prostitutes and there could be any one that occurred about the same time as ours but ugh if you look back at [potential suspects] and in the area where [any of them have] been there's dead prostitutes that's part of the compounding of the troubles we have...and I would be interested in your observation...about on what we do wrong...and you probably have lots more insight into looking and analyzing police procedures and things like that anybody else has and we never did a review of it...

Ted Bundy:

Sure, it's a different perspective...and I want a place to get a handle on this. I don't personally view or have any animosity towards you or who are in your profession generally...over time there's a certain amount of belligerence and hostility certainly as you get caught up in the whole adversary process...but in my heart of hearts I know you are doing the job you have to do and that's all there is to it. And it's a devil of a job. And I don't get any pleasure out of seeing you people suffer or lying awake nights or whatever you do in the course of doing your work, but sure, there's a lot that can be gained from talking to people like the FBI's been talking to people ... [serial killers]...but each case is so individual, that what you develop are techniques that can take advantage of and focus in and are flexible enough to deal with each case as a unique case and I'd say for God's sake you've got to avoid stereotypes ... you've got to avoid too

much speculation...and too much reliance on profiles 'cause if they're wrong, your whole investigation is skewed...and set off in the wrong direction...but if you have good techniques like these proactive techs, they're interesting but I think once you start to get a feel for the kind of individual and matching behavior in a given case ... you can take a given case and say this is similar to that kind of case and what might be going through the guy's head...but in my mind the only thing...profiles and speculation and hypotheses are only viable to the extent that they give the investigator a concrete ...some concrete ways of going in the field and developing evidence...along those lines...if the detective sits back and says well I wonder what kind of childhood he had...or I wonder if he has an Oedipus complex or whatever...you know all this psychological stuff...I don't think that really gives you the handle on actual behavior and I think this is what impressed me about the FBI...the Behavioral Sciences Unit... and that article in Psychology Today, they were focusing in on behavior here and there because the guy might have ten years ago wanted to behave in such a way and five years ago and last year but everybody including serial murderers are always changing, they're always adapting be it intentionally or unintentionally ... they're constantly changing...they might be doing it because they are trying to avoid an amount of detection so yesterday's profile even if it's accurate might be ... come to be inaccurate next week ...

Investigator:

When people are interviewed are they more accurate when they are done...

Ted Bundy:

That's true...but as long as they can focus in on real behavior ...what is happening ...what is the guy doing....and maybe matching up to what's he thinking...what is this man thinking let's say prior to the time he goes out hunting...what's going on in his mind...what events happened around him... how often does he go out...so correlating a mental element with the actual act or behavior...what's going on when he goes out searching...what kinds of cultures does he have ...how does he decide on one approach or another...what does he do, how does he take control of the victim...all of these things, right down the

line focusing in on behavior as much as possible as that's the element ...you can talk about the mental process all you want, but it's hard to tell when the guy is talking to you if he actually has a handle on what's going on in his brain...he probably has a better handle on what he's doing...as opposed to what mental process is backed up or caused what he's doing to occur...he may not have been sitting back taking notes or making a diary he's just been sort of automatic pilot to a certain degree...that's not the same as unconscious but he's moving through life on a lot of instincts...involved and a lot of conditions... things that are beyond intellectual awareness...but if you can get him to reduce what they're doing into behavior and cross correlate mental states to that and get an idea on the inner drive versus how its drive to behavior and how this guy goes about a plan finding and disposing of the bodies...why he disposes of them when he does...all these things, all these factors... and ugh, and then go back and after you have all that then the psychologists crew go back and try to unravel this guy's past but quite frankly, the only thing that really counts in my mind whether it's through therapy or apprehension of a criminal if you can figure out what happened when he was five years old, twenty years old or even ten years ago, maybe something relevant will come down to what is he doing here and now, what is he doing here and now...what is the Green River man doing right now... that's what's important because any one model does not work. Everything that's happened to that guy brought him to the point where he acts out in such a destructive and deadly way ...you know, everything that happened to the Green River man in his whole life up until the day he met [his first victim] influenced him and up to that point in time...and to truly understand that man and the only place you can begin to understand why he picked [his first victim] the way he did was to understand exactly what the behavior pattern that he exhibited when he did what he did with respect to hunting down, abducting and killing [his first victim]...and from that, as the sexual foundation you understand and you work backwards...and then forwards...piece by piece...I know it doesn't make any sense but again ugh focus on behavior and try and stay away from hang-up on the mental hypothesis and suppositions...why this thing...I had to smile a little bit when you mentioned the possibility of religious implication for dumping bodies in the river or burying the bodies ...there's a tendency to want to read too much into this...and rather than seeing it in practical terms ...just what do the facts say....I've seen other cases where there's talk of Satanic rituals and all kinds of things and you'll go crazy...I mean, look at the Wayne Williams case... and in this part of the country the Atlanta Child Murders were very early reported...and amongst the blacks there was intense speculation and everybody was certain beyond any doubt that it was a white person and I'm sure when

people start to get that in their mind...

Tape runs out...

Interview: Florida Prison with Ted Bundy, Dave Reichert and Robert Keppel

Date: 11/18/1984 Time: 12:56 Tape 7/Side B

Note: I do not know how to distinguish the voices as to who is Dave R and who is Robert K, so I have just transcribed the conversation as "Investigator" and Ted Bundy. Sometimes, it will be obvious which investigator is talking as he names himself or the other one present, but I still left it as simply investigator.

Investigator:

[there is no introduction of the tape on this one]

Ted Bundy:

And Wayne Williams turned out to be the antithesis of what people were thinking and felt some disappointment too, that he's black...and they let themselves get carried away and I'm sure people were scared to death of strangers and white people, particularly if they were coming in to the community... and here he is in efficient order, just knocking them off right and left...just cause he knew what he was doing...just like the Green River guy knows Pacific Highway South and downtown Seattle and he's in and out without people remembering him...they see him but they don't remember him...

Investigator:

Why do you suppose these guys seem to have an uncommon familiarity with these victims...I mean, just hearing you talk in the last two days almost gives me

the impression that you'd like to become [inaudible] ...

Ted Bundy:

I see what you're saying...

Investigator:

I was just wondering how you feel about that part of the profile...how close is that person to these routines...somebody asked [a well-known serial killer] one day when did you want to be a killer and he said oh, I'd just [inaudible]... and I just wondered if Ted Bundy was the same way...that it just feels that ugh you have something that you wanted to give when you wrote that first letter...and it was based upon, I don't know what, you call it some revelation ... something... I don't remember the first letter but there was something that attracted you to us...and I'm wondering what that something is...is it something that the Green River Man is going to be attracted to us for...

Ted Bundy:

Huh...there's a number of questions, well I never wanted to be a police officer... it was just unavoidable to become familiar with police procedures...over the years that I was on the streets...and it wasn't out of any desire to be a police officer, I mean I did work for the Seattle Crime Bureau but that wasn't...I didn't select that job because I wanted to get close to law enforcement, that was sort of genuinely a coincidence...I did not really look for that job to get inside police... and in the job with King County law enforcement , with King County deputies office, I remember filing for all the records in file cabinets on the first floor of the courthouse in the Sheriff's office...I went through all that stuff...but that wasn't because ...I didn't get that job because I wanted to get inside the feds, the police officers, but it just happened that the job opened up and ...there's plenty of ways to learn how to ...to learn police procedures...without getting close to you. Detective magazines contain a surprising amount of information, about investigative techniques, laws, methods of operation...

Investigator:

And you have people like [crime writers] who can go down to the police department and get files and put words into books and [inaudible]...

Ted Bundy:

Sure...and you're educating ...I'm telling you, for instance, you were telling me about the proactive techniques that were listed in the Psychology Today article... I'd never put that in there. There are people reading that that are saying "I want to find out how to avoid being detected" you know, once the serial killers of tomorrow are now reading up on all these reports about these computer systems that you're putting in they're going to know how to foil the computers. All they're going to have to do is to manipulate their MO and a various number of other characteristics of their behavior, of their crime, and they'll foul up your computer. Time, place, date, type of victim, cause of death, whatnot...you start to manipulate that and I don't see how any computer can match something like that that's buried...if you have some compulsive killer who's totally unconscious of what he's doing, yes...you'll find similarities...but if you have some guy whose deliberate and planning out each one he'll alter them in such a way that they won't be found...but yeah, sure, the answer is that the media writers of this world are making a living off you and me...and off the victim and that's really kind of sad because [the group] can [set themselves up] as an expert but what's [they are] expert on is making money and the real losers are you and society because there are guys who are out there who are really good at what they're doing and are reading this stuff and go out of their way to read the books, all the books, that come out ...

Investigator:

On the occasions that you've had to read various novels about you is there any things in particular that are bothering you...

Ted Bundy:

No, some of them are better than others and others are very inaccurate nevertheless there's stuff in there that...I mean, I could have told you that I was going to say to you the other day that the idea about the movie that I had, when I was fleshing it out, I got very excited about it but quite frankly but if you'd like it I'd be happy to flesh it out, I don't think I presented it very well...I could do a better job on paper, but that kind of idea ...but for God's sake never reveal that to any of the writers of the world, that's the last thing you want somebody to read and put in a detective magazine or a dime novel or read in Psychology Today...these guys are trying to outthink you ... the good ones are outthinking you...the police ... and they're doing it because they're studying...they're studying...reading the books and the magazines and all the articles that they can get a hold of...go to the library and ...

Investigator:

What do you think of that technique? You got all kinds of ramifications with a book... if that technique was planned with the Task Force there'd be no way we could keep that secret very long...we'd have to plan it through some other ruse...some other section...in addition to that, the political indications of throwing something like that into one of those communities out there that are going to theatres in my mind it would be appropriate that we could put into available in bedrooms and the one that would be best would be the five-in-one movies out there ...there's no real single movies out there in a nice parking lot... you know where in the shit would we find one of those and it's practically impossible but the concept is entirely possible if we can find moviesthere's all kinds of things we can bring out about the idea that may make it more appropriate...

Ted Bundy:

The logistics are something that I couldn't get into...and yet, I can't over emphasize the value of it...

Investigator:

You'd have to give this movie more than a go, I can tell you that...[inaudible]
Now, where those play and there are certain locations that would play but the ability to watch the vehicles would not be possible...

Ted Bundy:

The Friday the 13th kinds of movies...don't they play in places like Bellevue?

Investigator:

My kid watches those on Friday nights...they're on TV.

Ted Bundy:

It doesn't have to be a super hard core vicious x rated type of movie, something new, for my money, Howling is as good as anything...and if you get a Howling type movie, you don't have to have frontal type of nudity, that kind of violence ... that kind of film work is ...where young women are victimized, brutally victimized, are the kinds of movies that your man is going to be attracted to... okay, I know it. And lots of other folks too...it'd be like dipping a net into the sea and people would come out from under the rocks to see a movie like that I swear...The Texas Chain Saw Massacre I was fascinated to watch the darn thing...and people coming in to the theatre...I mean I'd like to sit down and talk to some of these guys...I'd really like to sit down and talk to some of these guys Jesus Christ...cause I'm telling you just assuredly as person will focus in on elements of that hobby outside of actually doing it so anyway, that's what I'm talking about in terms of procedures which are not generally known cause if some of these guys thought I mean a lot of them are looking over their shoulders because they don't want it known that they're interested in this kind of stuff... they're very well controlled because this part of their life has been going on for years and nobody knows about it still and that's why generally speaking that's why they are able to get away with what they're doing and nobody suspects what

they are doing...and that they come out of their holes and out of the woodwork...to gratify these kinds of desires that they have and since they can't always do it by directly acting out in public they do the next best thing ... you know, ugh...the first step I would take to control something like sexual assaults and serial killings like the type you've had in Green River and those kinds of things would be to close down all the peep shows and porno houses and outlaw movies that link sex to violence...that would be the very first step I'd take...and I think it wouldn't be the sole solution but I think it would go a long way to ...

Investigator:

You're talking about taking money out of people's pockets that are in high power...

Ted Bundy:

But some day I'd like to talk to some of those people because I know as sure as I'm sitting here that it may not be every guy that comes down the pike is going to have himself influenced or pushed or allowed to gratify themselves to the point where they went over the line from fantasy to reality where they went over the line from fantasy to acting out those fantasies and the kind of material that's available and has been available for years out there in society exploits those kinds of weaknesses or predispositions in certain individuals maybe it's through luck or randomness in predisposition but it has this link between violence and what I'm seeing in hatred, anger, sex or whatever...it can take and push the person over the line and feed that sickness...feed that sickness...and it wouldn't take care of the whole problem...

Investigator:

I've got a question for you...to change the subject a little bit...when did you first become familiar with the Green River project...

Ted Bundy:

A person in Seattle sends me clippings out of the Seattle Times...this person is as a matter of fact is out of Des Moines in South Seattle...and cuts the clippings out and on the back of one of the clippings there was an article and as a matter of fact I read the very first article about a body, [one of the victims], being found in the river...

Investigator:

So in 82 you're ...the first thing you're aware of is the body found anywhere or body count...so did you ask for more information later on about that...

Ted Bundy:

I don't tell this woman what to send...she is a very good friend and sends me clippings for years and once this thing started to heat up that is, once the Green River case started to get ... she was very sensitive about not sending me violent articles because she thinks that would be offensive so it got to the point where she was cutting articles out of the middle of other articles and sending them to me because I am sure they were Green River articles in there and she says excuse me I had to cut out a really offensive article because there are some terrible things happening and I don't want you to read about them...it started before it really heated up I got I was able to read just in fact these clippings ...

Investigator:

When did you start getting interested in it and start to read and taking notes and developing some of your ideas...

Ted Bundy:

About two months ago...I was getting the Tacoma News Tribune, starting in August...that's the first daily paper out of the Pacific Northwest I've received... in five or six years...

Investigator:

And once you found out there was a problem out there...

Ted Bundy:

Yeah, it was just ugh...in this part of the country...

Investigator:

What I was trying I guess...what made you try to contact the Task Force...I mean, on this occasion, what made you decide to ...

Ted Bundy:

Well, I'll have to look at that myself...it was a combination of revelation...I use the word revelation for a whole bunch of things ...the evolution of my own personality, my own circumstances...there was the situation where I was placed on disciplinary confinement where I had nothing to do, no CDs, no magazines, no visitors, no newspapers, no nothing...and I had this dark thing on TNT fresh in my mind and I thought about those and it can't rectify the fact that mentally I reached a stage in my own awareness where I just said well, you know what I might be able to contribute something...and it's interesting and I'm not being altruistic here, I'm fascinated by it...I just ...it's a challenge...to see it...in terms of the outside looking in.. I mean, not as a cop, but just as a person in my position looking at it...and so, well, that's when I wrote to you when I had nothing else to do and nothing and I had this on my mind and I felt disposed toward doing itI'd never felt disposed toward contacting you in the past

years, ten years...and I'd say, this is fascinating and I've got nothing to do and I'm interested ... on the other hand, out of the pocket, I'd like to do something not that I could crack the case or anything and I'm sure that you know that I'm really not telling you anything that you haven't thought of or talked about before anyway...but I discovered I might as well try, I don't know...and the more that I find out about it, the more I have to apologize for that second letter I wrote to [person]and copied to or sent to you...It did have a harsh tone to it...and I sometimes can get resentful and impatient ... and I think a lot of witnesses in cases of people who think they have information and they think they've been ignored by the police get uppity and mad and feel like they're not being paid the proper attention by police or whatever and I've come to that feeling and I've tried to explain it in my subsequent letters, I apologized for the tone of that letter...even though I felt like what I wrote to [that person] is like listen I understand that this ... you can't know how I think how important what I have is important to the investigation ...now, it turns out the more I learn the more humble I become...because I realize just how little I know...or how arrogant or over confident I was in my own abilities to think that I had the ability to nail this guy down...I still think I have a grip on it...but it's more...

Investigator:

So we can count on you to continue to run it by us...any thoughts you might have about this case...

Ted Bundy:

If you're not bored...

Investigator:

No, we're not bored, we're very interested...

Ted Bundy:

Well, if you feel I can be of some value...I'd love to ... not that I have a better grip on what's going on sure...now I really do feel like I have a foothold on this situation...

Investigator:

Well, don't get too over-confident...there's so much more...to these cases that not even the two of us could bring it all down...we could bring down five more people now and still need more...it's just a massive case ... there's so much...

Investigator:

I want to ask you this question and then I'll let you react to it... sometime in the future we might want to talk to you and I know he wants to talk to you about 1973, 1974, I was just a patrol officer then...but can you see Ted Bundy talking to us in the future...about back then if you felt some day in the future you could be in that position...how would you feel about he and I visiting...

Ted Bundy:

Well, I think it's good to be able to talk to you because I feel like I can develop rapport...even though it's all about this case...you know, it's easy to depersonalize somebody and view them as an adversary or somebody who is out to get one of you, but coming face to face, a lot of that hostility and stereotypes and impressions can fade away...and you realize that they are just people too... and so, I think, yes, I can see myself talking to you at some time ...

Investigator:

What...within the next two or three hours?

Ted Bundy:

Nice try... [they all laugh] No, I won't be talking to you then...

Investigator:

Yeah, well, I know you have a lot of those things pending that we talked about... the court system still has to decide and so forth...and I imagine your decision comes down to the outcome of some of that stuff...

Ted Bundy:

Well, I'd certainly...I'd certainly like to be able to help you but I'm not going to put my life...be unmindful of the consequences...so I've got to wait...and it's a source of some concern...

Investigator:

Do you have a scenario where you thought about how you'd like it to go down?

Ted Bundy:

No, I haven't... I really can't...

Investigator:

I was thinking about any type of remorse ... I've always believed that people have remorse, there's always these types of stories about these types of people not having remorse, and I don't know if you're an example or not...but we've

been here talking about [victim] every day....do you realize what's happened up there? There's those folks ... bureaucratic shuffle...

Ted Bundy:

It astounded me ten years have passed and that wasn't taken care of years and years ago ... anyway, yeah, I'm aware of that and...I just need to let it...

Investigator:

One of the things that I thought of is that and I'm just thinking out loud and I can't think of anything else but when you mention profile and being proactive ... I'd like to find out the MO characteristics of approaches in the hunts...and things like that you know...and going to places like I have to... I mean, I probably know the other side like the back of my hand...but somebody else might know the other side too...and also the crime scenes themselves ... I'm the one that spends the time with all the people out there searching sites for this stuff...wondering if what we're finding is any good...when we talk about missing clothing, missing backpacks, missing bicycles...what do people do with those things... I think your real answers to those types of questions are just absolutely invaluable because some of this stuff, you know, frankly, in my mind is so tenuous and everybody says well, what did Bundy do with all her clothes? And I have to say we don't have the answer to that yet. And then we start speculating on all this garbage...and I think it's unfair circumstance that those questions exist...and we may not have the answers but from a systems standpoint...from a law enforcement standpoint there's a lot of confusion in what to deduce...and there are suggestions about certain sides of the roads or Green River on impulse may be very valid...something that's never been done before other than just come across it by accident...because let's face it, nobody comes across a lot anyway...but there may be something creative that we can do in addition to... I don't know what your big question to ask...I don't know what your inner feelings are... I don't know if you care about clearing up a number of cases or not... or clearing up cases or if you have a lot of hostility for one jurisdiction which is a bother ...

Tape Ends.

Interview: Florida Prison with Ted Bundy, Dave Reichert and Robert Keppel

Date: 11/18/1984 Time: 12:56 Tape 8/Side A

Note: I do not know how to distinguish the voices as to who is Dave R and who is Robert K, so I have just transcribed the conversation as "Investigator" and Ted Bundy. Sometimes, it will be obvious which investigator is talking as he names himself or the other one present, but I still left it as simply investigator.

Investigator:

And it's something that I would like to have some answers for someday as a police professional. Frankly, everybody always asks me ... I'm the one that everyone always asks to come and talk...because I have some insight into not saying what he thinks...the things you were saying today were things that I've felt for quite a time and I recognize that Ted Bundy's not very far off...of known facts...and information about cases like that...I mean, we've gone and talked to other guys about this stuff and they're off the clock...and you have maintained an almost professional explanation for very obscure facts...

Investigator:

We discussed this a lot last night and I agree... it was a pretty professional analysis of our type case here...with just a little bit of information...I was impressed...

Investigator:

And I think the statement is sincere on my part that your thinking is accurate... course I don't know that we have the time to think as much as you do about that and ...

Ted Bundy:

There's not...you see, there's not the pressure and some people can't think under pressure...you've got so much to do ... you've got so much to do... and there's a difference ...

Investigator:

I almost feel like putting his name up on the board as an analysis person...[they all laugh]

Ted Bundy:

Well, you know some of it when you look at sports, and you've got great sports commentators and they replay a down of football...and you've got great football players that can't commentate worth shit...and I bet you have some great commentators that play football...and you know a lot of, everybody who does something couldn't do good analyzing it so I don't know...all I know is that sometimes that you can see it from a different perspective...and you don't have the pressure and you have the time and I think that the mind has the power to get inside facts and feel for the missing places...if nothing else just to feel where the missing places are And the facts have a life of their own cause there are very few of them here and it's not like clairvoyance you know ...I can't feel or see anything... but I have been humbled in the past couple of days the more I learn the more I know how jumping to conclusions a month to a month and a half ago... and you know, while I appreciate your comments and I hope you understand that what I said, I'm not trying to mislead you, I've given you my best understanding other than...as honestly as I can...and I think that you will find that sometimes when I'm writing, my written response is to give you a good deal more than my answers can by talking to you cause I tend to wander and

ramble and get a little haphazard in the way I verbalize things ... I lose my train of thought [laughs] well, except ... now that I've started to see some more [drifts off]I don't want any attention...that's the last thing I want. I've had enough attention, I don't like attention. I don't like my name in the newspaper, I have never liked it...if I could leave well enough alone, I'd never appear in a newspaper, I never will...I don't like publicity...people seem to read that wrong in me, a lot of people...they say, oh, he wants publicity...but I don't. I'd had to use it sometimes just to fight off the wolves...or maybe cause I got mad, ugh to fight back, cause some people were attacking me in the press, and maybe sometimes my ego did run away with me, but inside I've always known that I do not like publicity...I hate publicity...and in the five years I've been here, I've had dozens and dozens and dozens of offers... the only thing I did do which was a mistake in retrospect was talk to [journalists] and I had to lose them in a wild goose chase... I mean, this is the thing, now, that's in vogue...the topic of criminology and the bloody ones... and unfortunately it seems once a name gets in the limelight it has a life of its own...the name Ted Bundy pops up everywhere...in Time Magazine, they list all the bad guys of all time and my name pops up Ted Bundy pops up and you don't see [another serial killer] and he's confessed to 40 murders...I mean, it's kind of fascinating to see how the news media promotes and makes somebody into a public figure and then kind of clings to it and you don't know cause there are a lot of people accused of a lot more stuff...and have confessed to it all and who are never there... and I don't know anybody who has...and I don't enjoy it, no I don't enjoy it at all. I don't like it cause every time it happens it puts more heat on me here.

Investigator:

Do people read about it like the officers and ...

Ted Bundy:

Everybody reads about it...by the way, I need to remember to get those clippings back...

Investigator:

Ok...those publicity issues, I'm kind of forced ...I'm in a different position than you cause I'm kind of forced to talk to them all because politically I have to... being in the job I have or Dave has we have to... but I don't believe that we've ever spoke ill of you over the years...the cases for example, we've attached your name to them but I don't think that especially recently in the last two years the serial murder concept has gone and taken off you know and everybody calls all around the whole damn nation and starts calling in shit and it's been and I just happen to be involved in this schedule of the cases and we talked about Williams and we talked about the [inaudible] down the river...three days before he was caught ...and we conferenced between one detective from the Son of Sam and the Hillside Strangler case and John Gacy case and one from the Zebra Killer... and myself...

Ted Bundy:

Okay... See, that's why ... that's the value of your computer system ... perhaps if you or a detective were somehow, and I don't know how, garbage in, garbage out, right? If human beings aren't willing to detect a pattern early on or they don't look at data in a computer you're not going to see that even back in August of 82 that you have a problem...or react to it...quickly enough ... but if you had responded with a Task Force back then, if your computer system says "whoa, big problem" you would have had a chance to at some of these sites where you found fresh bodies and any time ...I have to keep saying this...any time you find the body of a young woman certainly in an area like Green River...I say, anywhere in the world, I know it's hard not to, run in and process the scene but some way of even silently processing the scene and not processing it at all for a while and there'll be a good chance at some of the others, he'll be coming back...and you did say he did come back to those sites...

Investigator:

One of my problems was at the site of the river, those other sites are so distant ... from the time we should have been there...

Ted Bundy:

Well, that's the problem...

Investigator:

Just as a side light when those cases went down, personally I asked about a pattern of a similar person that was a commander of police at the time of the missing and murdered girls cases, and he was not willing to see if there was any kind of pattern going to establish something organized...

Ted Bundy:

I keep going back to this so forgive me, but it's always amazed me that the police will move in like they do on a scene and I can just imagine what this River man, the Green River guy's going to do when he comes back to a site and he's got all of his antenna out and he's driving back and forth and I'm sure it's gone through his mind...that they might be staking out his site...but he still has to come back, you'll notice how he keeps coming back and it's just not sequential, he's coming back to 410 or came back to 410 over a period of time... but he is coming back to this one area...maybe you could work something out east of Enumclaw...

Investigator:

Well, if numbers are any indication, we still got at least two more out there and maybe a lot more so ...

Ted Bundy:

I think absent an active, fresh scene if I were to focus again I'd focus on the scene ... you've got lots of focuses in this case... you've got [victim] buried, and you've got different kinds of things, you've got fibers... and evaluating your other efforts and putting your computer together and all that stuff...

Investigator:

Pick up sites and dump sites...

Ted Bundy:

The dump sites is what I'd say he'd tend to come back to ... it's a real handle there, until you find another fresh one, Enumclaw is the way...the way to go.

Investigator:

Well, as you know, the guy's been to Portland too...they've got a fresh one and they've got him right on the spot...it could happen. I mean [offender] got away, he was pulled over with her, in California, he's pulled over erratically driving and the policeman asked him what's wrong with your friend and his "friend" is dead, strangled...the guy had a body in the car you know...freaking luck...

Ted Bundy:

What's your feeling – do you think he's still there? Do you think he's still in the area?

Investigator:

I do...why should he leave? He's successful. Why move...

Ted Bundy:

You're right, you're right. Probably might not have the ability to move. ..or the desire to move...you know, a lot of people just don't think about moving...why did Bianchi move, they were successful...

Investigator:

I have a feeling that he probably did a couple at once...and ugh I have a feeling that he did several in Seattle before...77...and I have a feeling he's done some in Spokane....or Bellingham...

Ted Bundy:

Oh, sure, sure, you can't underestimate ...this guy has the freedom for whatever reason other than just living on an unemployment check...or whatever...he's working 7 days a week...so he obviously has the freedom to roam, and whether he always has the money to put the gas in the car is another matter...and I don't think he's held down by a family, so yeah, he's going to roam far afield when he can, ugh just to add spice to his life and maybe again, he's not unmindful of the fact that he's trying to avoid detection... and it might, I'm sure he's thinking of he really has to do something but he did something last week and there's something in the paper and the Task Force is on the television and things are just too hot in the Seattle Tacoma area so let's try somewhere else...try somewhere else has creped in because he's got to go he's just hot to trot you know...Sure, Portland, Olympia, Bellingham, Everett...

Investigator:

What about Vancouver, BC?

Ted Bundy:

BC? Oh not possible...and cross the border? That's a bunch of shit...

Investigator:

You gonna be able to meet with us tomorrow...

Ted Bundy:

Oh sure...

Investigator:

Same time?

Ted Bundy:

Oh sure...

Investigator:

Staggering problem is BC has 64 in the last 10 years...unsolved female homicides...Victoria had one in June, Victoria had a prostitute a year ago...64 in the last 10 years unsolved female homicides that's a hell of a lot.

Ted Bundy:

There are lots of guys up in the Pacific Northwest ...and I'm continually

amazed. I've read USA Today and I pay attention to different things you know and I read Florida newspapers and pay attention to what's happening in Florida...Pacific Northwest seems to have more of its share ... and again maybe because I pay attention to it. And British Columbia ... they caught that one fellow and gave him several hundred thousand dollars and they're still having trouble up there...

Investigator:

I want to ask you a question about a comment you made earlier that it was a mistake to talk to those two [journalists]...why did you think it was a mistake...

Ted Bundy:

Oh, well... I just ... it was unneeded and unnecessary publicity...as it turned out they weren't trustworthy and they reneged on their agreement and so forth but it was just ... I reached the point with them where I had to just ...they wanted...we played this little game and they even had a written agreement where I was going to speculate on all this stuff...and ugh, after a while they started acting like [a stereotype of a cop and cop interrogation technique], they started playing good guy, bad guy, with me and the last thing I heard in Tallahassee was "how many Ted, how many?" and I wasn't about to play that game but anyway, I agreed to speculate and to play that game...and we all knew that that was sort of pander to the perverse interests of the reading general public sufficiently to get readers' interests and to hype the book and all that stuff... and it's a dishonest thing to do for a variety of reasons but so we speculated and I said, I don't know, but this could happen and that could happen...and so I led them all over the pasture... and I told them anything that happened to come into my head...there was nothing there. You know, we can't separate fact from fiction...and there's a lot of fiction there...

Investigator:

Well, I think you did a very good job on that ...you weren't jumping around, you

were pretty connected with them...if what's in the book is a representation of that...

Ted Bundy:

Well, I don't know so I haven't read the book...I heard a little bit about it and they took several hundred hours of tape recordings, couple hundred, and I don't know what all is in there...but ugh ...

Investigator:

Your wife has read the book?

Ted Bundy:

I think she has...and wasn't pleased...I told her at the time I was going to play that game and she didn't like the idea...she liked the idea even less when she read the book. But she got over it. Yeah, that wasn't good at all, it didn't accomplish a thing...it didn't enlighten anybody or ...

Investigator:

Looking back, if anybody ever asks me if I have a copy ... it's in the bottom of my trash can...

Investigator:

That kind of good guy bad guy technique is used in all twelve and fifteen year olds prisoners...

Ted Bundy:

In Pensacola when they arrested me back in 78 I was in that room and ...in the Pensacola City Jail with 2-3 detectives all night long for several days ...

Investigator:

We have the transcripts, what they have...

Ted Bundy:

Well, some day we might talk about that...but that's not the way to handle it... being in that position is not the way to handle it...I couldn't tell you the right way to handle it but I can't fault them, they were doing the best they could...but you see they were under the thumb of [other people] who wanted to get me back to Tallahassee in the limelight as soon as possible and that was the worst thing [anyone] could have done...any time you put me in the limelight ... any time you put the cameras on me then I get hostile...the last thing I want to do is cooperate with somebody who's ...

Investigator:

Well, we're here to guarantee you that this whole thing will stay with us and as [we] said earlier we're not if anybody asks us, we may make a statement that yes, we were down there, but what we said to each other is none of their business...

Ted Bundy:

Well, I hope you're not letting [writer] types in there...doing trash to your files ...

Investigator:

Nobody's going to go through that...we've learned our lesson

Ted Bundy:

[Writers have] used me and I imagine in the process used you...

Investigator:

Yeah, well indirectly, there are documents that we share just because we were cooperating agencies but if it got in the wrong hands we're screwed...we're in a sorry state...that's why I am so hostile to some of those people...and ugh...

Tape fades out and ends...

Interview: Florida Prison with Ted Bundy, Dave Reichert and Robert Keppel

Date: 11/18/1984 Time: [not noted, continuation] Tape 8/Side B

Note: I do not know how to distinguish the voices as to who is Dave R and who is Robert K, so I have just transcribed the conversation as "Investigator" and Ted Bundy. Sometimes, it will be obvious which investigator is talking as he names himself or the other one present, but I still left it as simply investigator.

Ted Bundy:

Yeah, well, [deep sigh] I've learned a lot ...

Investigator:

That's why what you've learned is awfully interesting to me...cause I think you and I probably have a lot of the same observations...from different perspectives...from the actions that are effective from the cops, following leads ... what kinds of facts and assumptions I'd like to talk to you about those just in the 1974 cases...and a lot of the frustrations we're feeling in this case we felt back then...we're always wondering if there's something better we could have been following back then ...from your perspective versus ...[inaudible] this is a strange dynamic that has gone on over a period of three years and it involves the cases we were aware of at the time...

Ted Bundy:

Well, I think if you can start to assemble all the data that you have on your

computer and my suggestion would be to simplify all the information you have and try to develop as you are doing I'm sure all the different suspect lists...not the one, but several different ones that come into different information whether it's suspect vehicles, field cars, people driving through a certain area...any traffic citations, parking tickets, the whole nine yards, different ways of looking at it and then, run them through, and if you have ...my guess is that your man is on your list now...just somewhere that you can't find him but ugh and if you find a hundred guys that come up on more than one list it's a rough road to hoe and it's going to give you those people one at a time...and I don't know what you can do but start interviewing those people one at a time and have input into it...or sense on what you're getting back on this guy...and ask the right questions...and get a feel for what this guy...is he nervous...or is he savvy or will he take a polygraph...will he cooperate with the law and all that stuff...does he have alibis for any of these dates...

Investigator:

You seem to feel that the comparison to computer lists is a good investigative method to tackle this...

Ted Bundy:

Oh yes. That's one and I think it's a very good one...if the program is properly done and properly written, and if you have the same, Steve Smith and Steven Smith, that Steve and Steven will come out and work out ...that developing programs won't drop people out through holes...yeah, I think that's one good focus...momentarily...cross reference different lists and then start to do your proactive stuff...like license plate numbers and [inaudible] whether it be Ponders Corner or misdemeanors or traffic citations, all that stuff....with a computer you can do miracles things you couldn't do in 74...some things you couldn't do in 74... states have to have people in decisions or decision making authority and the Task Force is forced to you know, take some risks...

Investigator:

Were you aware of the computer listing program we did in the missing and murdered girls cases?

Ted Bundy:

Was I aware of it?

Investigator:

Did you know, or have you ever read anything about it?

Ted Bundy:

I read about it ... about 2500 suspects...

Investigator:

Huh...we're finally getting to a stage in the Green River case where we might be able to do something like this...but at the time that we did this it was no longer at a time when anyone had ever done anything like this...whatsoever...okay at the time of the first computer this would have been sometime around the summer, July of 75... okay...up until that time we were looking for creative things to do investigating the cases, one of the things we did was that we went through all 3500 of these suspects that had been snatched off to us or worked up over a period of time and picked out the hundred best from our own...much like we're doing here...sitting down and going over the file of a potential suspect... to see if he's worthy of investigation ... we did that ... there were three individuals and we picked out the best of 3500 and there were three of us and we split them up three ways and we would investigate these as much as we could.. the other tactic we used was the computer... because everyone says did you investigate it this way or did you investigate it that way...so what we started doing was occasionally accumulating lists mainly out of political necessity

because somebody would say alright ugh have you checked out all the mental patients in the state...in Washington....as if this guy would have been on this list right? So we go over to DSHS and we get a computer readout that has 5000 leads on it so we can answer some councilman's question about whether or not we got the list or not and whether we checked them out or not ...no ...we hadn't checked out every damn one unless it happened to be on this list someplace and we might of checked it out ... we had 800 about filed Volkswagen that were cited that somebody said this looks like the composite and it was a Volkswagen and that kind of stuff...so we might have had about 800 leads there...we went and got about 41,000 registered Volkswagen owners in the state of Washington okay? Then we got a little more creative with our lists because we wanted to know just like what you said here which is what are the extreme facts that we really know about this case...how could our suspect have come across any of our victims so what we started doing was get a list of about 500 riders around Issaquah find... and got everybody who'd ever ridden a horse because those are horse trails that come down from the top there...we thought well, maybe he knows the area from that...ugh, then we went on with a list of about 1200 motel registers...people that were in the area at the time these girls were missing, transients and odd jobs and so on...that's one, and then we got the vendors of the area which was another thousand or so...vendors would be people that work the gas stations, Safeway stores, things like that, names of people who the victims might have come into contact with ... then we went through and got the transfers ...we have an apparent link between Oregon, UW and Central and possibly Evergreen which is one we never did find to it...to link her remains...we got the transfer list and that was probably 5000... a list of people going this way...then we got ugh for each girl we had ugh class lists so we went to Oregon State and got all her class lists and we went to Evergreen and we went to Central and talked to classmates...this was kind of an unknown figure because it might have been ... kind of bad because they're females and so the numbers were the thousands that were on this listLynda Healy had one class at UW that had above 700 in it...in one class so it's like psychology of some sort...then we went out to and accumulated all the address books just on the thought that somebody may have come in contact with ...that she really knew...you know...believing that possibly this case may be somewhat traditional may be somebody did know her and she had a name in the book...when we went to the houses we found paper...paper with names on it, phone numbers and stuff like that....then we went out and we accumulated in the case investigation itself in the background of the victims we accumulated the names of people, some of which we didn't have contact and some of which we had...so we had a separate alphabetical

letter for each of these lists okay so when we had a chance to finally get to the bottom of the list we're talking about ugh 300,000 names okay ...I mean, it's staggering to think about trying to get one single case ...somebody said have you checked out all her classmates, you might be able to go do that but with all this other rig-a-ma-role going and the politics and the pressure and all this stuff...how can we use these lists...you know, what I was concerned about is I don't want him to know, if any particular suspect or person, I mean a lot of these people aren't suspects, just people, names...would appear with say an A or an F....three signifiers assigned to say like John Smith, say....I thought that I wanted to go investigate him...and I thought if the guy had three criteria who ... replacing him...say if he had A, B and motel...this motel and a yellow Volkswagen then somebody would tip him off as a potential suspect...that would be a pretty good guy to invest in you know? We got to going through these names and there's 1600 3's alright? Divided by three people you know we're not going to do that so how many have four was the next question we asked and it turned out there were about 350...still unmanageable because we didn't know at the time how many of these were cross matches...it was a pain in the ass, but how many hit 5 times...how many names appeared with 5 letters after them... and there were 25....that's management....out of this 25 there are 4 and out of that 4 there is one name in there...narrowed down to....out of all that mess... that'd gone into that computer...check off our first suspect...that's what happened in that case...you know what went on with that...but that's the type of system we're talking about right?

Ted Bundy:

Yeah, more or less. But there are all kinds of listing and what you'd be looking for in this case would be something different...but still there are lists of lists and...

Investigator:

Well, as you were talking through, and talking about ...was some of the questions I was asking was referencing lists without your really knowing it because I was trying to get out how fruitful you would think the guy would have

been stopped, contacted, or more FI's, traffic tickets, stopped by a fisheries officer up there...hunting officer...somebody...we would have a list with his name on it...how many of those creative blitzes can we think of...now, that's where you might be able to help us...is it realistically and practically ...how do we identify the lists...what are in these interviews that his name might appear on...okay, we've got DFI's for those areas, we will accumulate the traffic citations that's all a monumental job and it's unknown if he has those...but it sucks as a lot of these lists are useless...but some of them were crucial to getting down to the three to five we were investigating...and I think that's what we want, and it would be nice for the computer to say 'aha, this is the only guy you should be investigating.' But it won't tell us that, okay, it will tell us a series of names that we might investigate...sure, okay, we're now operating under the assumption that instead of spitting out that specific name...when we're going to Atlanta, they're not interested in what we did but the problem is they already had a computer program set up beforehand and they are inputting all this data and it's actually a bigger computer than what we are using now but their system must be a more expensive system ...the software alone must be around 80,000 dollars... and our whole system isn't even that much but anyway, ugh, they could not ask these questions...they couldn't separate the lists out...out of all that information, the one thing they could do with their computer is if you ran a name, they could tell you what his favorite power drill...how much he paid...did he pay it in person...and if he did it in cash...you know, they could tell you all that about a person...which would literally take us weeks to find out all that information about him...

Ted Bundy:

Did Wayne Williams show up in their computer?

Investigator:

Yeah, you know, they could run his name and find out if he had a driver's license, a car registered to him, the fact that he had a power bill or a telephone bill...on this computer system wired in there...to a couple of agencies...but as far as showing up I do not believe that he did show up in their computer as a

suspect...

Ted Bundy:

They didn't seem to have suspect type lists...they didn't have organization like you had that would tend to narrow it down in some meaningful way ...I mean there's no sense in putting the entire Seattle and Tacoma telephone books in there...but there are some lists that are more meaningful than others...

Investigator:

But it might be crucial if we want to identify this [inaudible] direction and say Puyallup, Tacoma, and put in traffic citations in Tacoma or FI's in Puyallup as a list and in conjunction with that list another foreign territory like WSP stopped him on I-90...and all they did was write him down a warning...okay, we get a lot of those lists too...officers tell me they write don't write things in their book all the time...

Ted Bundy:

I don't want to change the subject too radically but...How often do the state patrol let's say traffic on 410...and they do have patrols up there...I mean, if they see a car parked along the road that's in the middle of the night and it looks like it might be disabled do they stop and write up anything on it?

Investigator:

As far as up near Enumclaw I think it is a real sparse coverage...but ugh we've already started to compile lists...for that kind of thing...

Ted Bundy:

How about...are there any truck drivers up there...is there logging up there?

Investigator:

Oh yes...it's not as big of course...but there is some...

Ted Bundy:

Do they block that area off...they did a few years back when I was there...but I don't know if they're back...I mean, they may have seen a car parked along the roadway...

Investigator:

The year you were injured at Crystal Mountain, one of the lists we had was injuries on Crystal Mountain skiing area and we got all the injuries for everybody who'd been injured up there...

Ted Bundy:

For Crystal Mountain...why Crystal Mountain? Why not Snoqualmie Pass or ...

Investigator:

Well, I'll tell you why...it's because when our suspect topped to one of our importance lists and made casual talk about what he enjoyed...he mentioned Crystal Mountain...

Ted Bundy:

Well how about that...[laughs]...

Investigator:

You learn something every day... shows up a lot...

Investigator:

To your point, I don't know if this will work...we're down to Oregon for something like this, where they couldn't investigate and they wanted to know if they could use something like this...computers...and my thought was well you guys are going to have to do a lot of work...to accumulate names, still...I mean, you're not investigating anybody ...what they did do was cover a three county area and they were going to get everybody who'd ridden in a car cause they felt he could be driving a rental car...they haven't arrested crap....he was the only person known in the car...so I know it can be done. I don't know if that's another factor of luck...catching him driving down the road with a body in his car...or catching him in a housing area in the middle of the night with ...where he shouldn't be....if those are luck then we've got luck...

Ted Bundy:

You just have to manipulate and use it...and try to weave a net of some sort and be assertive and develop your own lists using the hundred license plates you picked up...when you were doing surveillance on Green River sites...that might be a little bit...might take several days separating your surveillance from discoveries...still there might be something there...sure, if you start developing your own lists to go along with the official type lists that's when I think you're really starting to get the edge ...

[tape ends with conversation going and this is the end of the tapes that were given to me...]

Interview: Florida Prison with Ted Bundy and Robert Keppel

Date: February 22, 1988

[The conversations that follow I have edited in some portions due to sensitive disclosure. I received them as already transcribed versions provided by King County Sheriff Office, Archives, in June of 2015.]

RK: Ted, are you aware this is being taped?

TB: Yes.

RK: Do you have any objection?

TB: No, no. It's ok.

RK: Ok. What I've done is I've gone through this form ...we're trying to capture two premises. One is a statewide homicide information tracking system where detectives that have particular questions about a case from the past can call in and find out information. Typically they go through an interview process with some guy that is trying to get out of a burglary charge and he says, "say, I have information on who killed such and such, and the police at the time may not know who such and such is, may not know what jurisdiction it's in, so they can call into our office and we can run up what information they have from the fields in here and determine if there has been such a case in the state, to know if this guy is bull-shitting them or not or anything like that. That is one phase. It can be

used just to identify a nick name or an address in one case associated with an address and in another, a names association, circumstance association, or anything you want to do. But that's one section of this federal grant we got. The other section is to do a research study on those high priority things that seem to solve homicide cases. Now, we're not just talking about serial murder here. We're talking about the whole spectrum of homicide. So, we could ... I don't know that you can divide the two up at this point, when you're gathering statistics and things or you know, deaths that occur, you know, in one period and another and another and another and another in another jurisdiction, but, what we've done is kind of combined the two aspects into one form. This will be a form that I myself will fill out, plus the program manager and the research director who will go around to all agencies and look through every single homicide case, which is about 1400 from I98I through '86, and record the data from those cases on this form. We didn't go back any further in history because 1) the UCR statistics aren't very good prior to that time and we wanted, in case we had questions about, the cases you know, things missing from the files and obviously not where they should be, that we can get ahold of somebody that might know something about it, return back to then and ask them. So we didn't, we kept '81 through '86 as our study period and then we're relying on them filling out the usual VICAP form, 1987, '88, to keep the program up just for the information part. We will have people calling them back to fill in the rest of the VICAP information and the rest of this form information once we get a staff to do it. But, the VICAP form is in here too, but, it, is under different questions. We've got more emphasis in certain areas, more detail, so that's where we wanted to go with it, was that our computer now can take a number. Like it just so happens that these first few numbers go particularly with what VICAP has, so we can tell our computer "okay print out all the 9 through 16". You know, give us the answers to those. And we can virtually print out the whole VICAP form via the computer without ever having to fill it out, by just filling out this form and then we can send that on to them and still cooperate in that program. We didn't want to do anything that would offend those people cause we got the money from the same source that funded them, National Institute of Justice. So, what we're doing here is kind of a first time study. It was a surprise to me that there was never, ever a study done on solvability factors in homicide cases at all. There have been studies in burglary and robbery and rape, but nothing ever done with homicide... A lot of demographic studies done by sociologists and some case studies done by some psychiatrists. But as far as the police goes and the investigation features, there's never been anything done. So that's basically what we've done here. And I wanted to go over some of these questions with you and

show you what they look like and ask you about the, what you think of the particular questions here. I'll go right back to the offender section here.

TB: Well, I've seen the VICAP form and it's not nearly as complex or thorough as this. I've seen one of them. I don't know if it's been updated or not. I've also seen the questionnaire that the FBI used in its sexual homicide study. They call it the Protocol. But it's a questionnaire. And it's not as thorough as this, in my opinion. Of course, it is for different purposes, but it's It has some gaps in it in my opinion.

RK: This does?

TB: No, no, no.

RK: Or that questionnaire.

TB: The questionnaire. I've spoken to [them] some about it.

RK: One of the things that bothers me about that study is that, you know, I've seen several presentations by the FBI and they always tell law enforcement anyway, that they went into this study with the idea to go into people and say, "ok, explain to us how you beat us." But, if you look on the questionnaire or the protocol they have, there's nothing to do with any of those questions there.

TB: No, it is not there.

RK: That bothers the hell out of me that -- what have we served here? To me, the why doesn't mean shit to a policeman. I mean, we can't be hung up in the whys. We have to be hung up in how and when and where and what. If we start getting into whether or not some guy was beaten by his mother at age 6 and sexually abused by the father, therefore he came out looking like he did, that doesn't mean anything to an investigation. It doesn't mean anything to catching him.

TB: Well, that, there is ...your re right but I, ... I think they got that information but I don't know how they got it. The question there puzzled me because I've read a tentative evaluation of the information they got. It was in one of their law enforcement bulletins a year or two ago.

RK: Ah, ha. Right.

TB: And I, the information that they presented in there, albeit very general, I can understand why they didn't want to get into specifics. They kept it real general and preliminary in terms of what they were trying to conclude. But, they were talking about such things as what was going on in this man's mind before, during and after and how did he purge the crime scene and all these other things which are, you know, nuts and bolts, practical stuff. But the question there did not address the questions, those concerns in that way. And I felt, well, they must have been getting this information from their individual interviews. I mean, interviews which went beyond the questionnaire which were where they got into feelings and what was going on in this man's mind the day that he did something and the minute, hours preceding a crime and during the crime and what happened after. I don't have the... it's been some time since I've read the study, but you know, I liked what they were talking about. They were talking about the organized crime scene versus the disorganized crime scene and all those things which made a lot of sense to me.

RK: Ah ha.

TB: Mixed scenes, organized scenes, disorganized scenes, and then persons who are organized or disorganized and how all these fit together. It made a lot of sense. I know you're not interested in why, but, I thought they were getting at the heart of the matter there. But, I didn't think their questionnaire was.

RK: You didn't.

TB: I don't know where they were getting that information, but it wasn't off that questionnaire.

RK: Yeah, well, they've never really published the results of the study in any empirical form where, you know, a researcher or social scientist could either support it or attack it. It's come out in kind of summary chapter form in that FBI journal. I have no doubt that most of those things that they have in there are factual and are applied to those 36 people that they interviewed. But, I'm not so sure that 36 is a very good number to --especially with a variance. There seems to be quite a variance in the backgrounds of the M.O., the backgrounds in the offenders. And to generalize to what all or maybe future investigations should be might be kind of hazardous and I would certainly hope that most police officers would view everything with an open mind to the extent that they have, you know, they pursue all angles and not just hone in on one. Cause, you know, the FBI may be experienced and recognized, organized and disorganized crime scenes, but the routine detective does not.

TB: Ah ha.

RK: I mean, he just says "shit, there's a lot of blood around here" you know, and starts picking it all up. And doesn't make the connection yet that the FBI has that

the guy lives reasonably close to the, where the offense occurred, right?

TB: Yeah.

RK: But as soon as they start making those connections – but, how often does a homicide detective in his career get a disorganized crime scene? One that he, could say "ok, this really is a finite, paranoid schizophrenic murder, right? Ok and I know I am going to find my killer in one mile." Shit. I went to their first school where they brought all this stuff out. And I never had one. Never. I did after that, after I went to the school and I paid more attention to what was real close to the crime scene, the house and everything. Didn't have to look far ... next door ...but it, was obvious that it was one of those types of crime scenes. But most detectives will not have read all that stuff. And, you know, you look at the state of Washington, you know, across this perspective of what detectives are, and hell, they're in rotation situations, at maximum three years as a detective. And they rotate back to patrol. Most of the departments have thirty or forty men in them. That's it. So you never really get a situation where there's a real good experienced person, you know, behind the gun being the detective. And usually when they do get in that position you know, everybody wants them out after a while anyway because they get, you know, it looks like they're getting favoritism and everything else. Jealousies start up. They got their own problems.

TB: Well, just, I wish I'd brought that copy. I've wanted, it's been, it's occurred to me several times it'd be interesting to go over that with you, that particular summary that was in the law enforcement bulletin about the study the FBI did with those 36 persons. Because I think there's a lot of good information in there. I'll be very general and the fact that, let's face it, 36 is not a very good sample size and we don't know if it's representative, it's certainly probably not representative of the total population, if we can view it that, way, the population of serial murders who are on the streets today.

RK: Right.

TB: And not identified and not in prison. And so any conclusion you draw from it would have to be very -- taken with a grain of salt. You know, very tentatively viewed. And yet there was some very good stuff in there. I still think that like you say, your average detective may not understand what the FBI means by a disorganized personality and all those characteristics they associate in terms of background and present behavior and how that relates to, may or may not, relate to a disorganized crime scene. And so on and so forth. And probably in my opinion, it, the real world does not lend itself to those neat kinds of characterizations anyway because any crime scene is probably going to be a mixture of various organized and disorganized kinds of aspects, characteristics that you know, that ultimately each investigator has to go on his gut, on his, you know, on his instincts anyway.

RK: Ah hah.

TB: But I did think it was pretty good. They're on the right track. I mean, they're talking to the right people. They're trying to anyway. But they're up against some pretty formidable problems because, obviously not everybody accused of that kind of criminal behavior is going to talk to them. And even if they do there's a question whether they're going to be totally candid with them.

RK: Right. I think that was one of the big criticisms is that they had to sit and listen to, you know, people like [another serial killer] talk. And he told quite a few of the details, but there's no question in my mind like you say, he's lying too. He's not telling the whole truth.

TB: Yeah. That's, it's curious that someone would admit to that kind of conduct and yet over the years, for whatever reason, whatever psychological need they have to fabricate or embellish the story of the account, it happens. I've seen it happen. I've seen it. I've talked to guys who have come to me. I mean, it's

interesting -- guys come to me. They've come to me over the years and, you know, for whatever reason. I don't, you know, they'll try to speculate, but they'll say "hey, let me tell you about this ." And they told me some things and bullshitting me. And yet I know they're not.

RK: Do you challenge them?

TB: Oh, yeah. I know how to -- I mean, I can see through a guy very quickly. It's fascinating when somebody comes to me. I know when they're bullshitting me and I know when they're not. I know when what they're telling me is for real and when what they're telling me is a fantasy. And I've had a guy do both with me. It's a curious, curious situation. I had a guy sit down and just tell me stories. I know he was telling me stories. And yet I also know the, that, essentially he'd done what they said he did but he had a need to tell it a different way. So he looked different --he looked better...in his own mind. Ok? He wasn't a savage, lust-filled killer, but he was this guy who just, he just got mad. The bitch made him mad. So, you know, and these, it's very curious how guys will, well, some guys or some men who committed a var....a series of murders will over the years in their own mind, will rewrite history to satisfy their needs and they will lie to themselves perhaps. I mean one person in particular...fascinating. One was.... maybe someday we could talk about it, just for the sake of our discussion, but I don't want to get into it now. I know he's done a lot more than you say he's done.

RK: Ah ha.

TB: And yet he freely admitted to the police murders, many of which he didn't do...a couple dozen.

RK: Oh.

TB: He confessed to murders he didn't do and didn't confess to murders he did do. Ok. He was so messed up. And he did it in such a -- his confessions were expressing his inner needs, his inner, reflections of his, of his, of his inner self, which was somewhat juvenile.

RK: Yeah.

TB: And which also was, there's a need for approval. And he wanted people to say, "You're doing, you're a good guy. You're doing a good thing." But anyway, I don't want to get too lost on this, but it's fascinating to see how people will embellish on these accounts, under the best of conditions. So you don't know what the FBI is getting.

RK: Can you generalize to a situation, a little bit earlier, we were talking about the need to get right on the interview of the suspect. What would you do in the interview with the suspect right off the bat?

I mean the obvious ...the obvious intent to the police is to get the guy to talk about what he's done.

TB: Ah ha. Sure.

RK: How would you go about, doing that?

TB: Yeah.

RK: That need is so important in your mind, to get to it, early, to get to him quick. How do you do it?

TB: Well, good question. And I've thought about this... You know, using my own experiences and the experiences and over the years I've run across many people who have talked to the police and many who haven't. And I've seen what's happened. And I've seen guys who were handled, in my opinion, from the standpoint of law enforcement, who were handled properly and those who weren't.

BK: You mean legally or do you mean?

TB: No, I'm talking about, if I, you know, in terms of getting information out of them. In terms of whether or not they were getting information out of them or they were getting accurate information or whether they turned this guy off and they intimidated him or threatened him or caused him not to talk. You know, I've lived in this environment now for the better part of, well, over ten years. And intimately know the, it's sort of an avocation with me to hear guys stories about what happened to them when they arrest you. Why did they confess or why they didn't confess or what they told the police and what they didn't tell the police. I mean, I, and I get it, from a different side you get it from. I mean, I may not be getting the straight dope either.

RK: Yeah.

TB: Often times, more often than not. I don't know. If I were, for instance, let me put it this way. When a guy approaches me or even I approach somebody, I think I'd be interested in knowing about his case. Not because I want to tell anybody, for just my own personal information. Some guy comes in, he's been convicted of "x" number of murders and I'm just kind of fascinated by what

happened. I mean, how, why did he start? I honestly have that kind of an interest. And I have been approached by and approached maybe as many as ten different serial, persons accused of serial murder over the years, just to find out what was going on in their minds and how they did what they did and how they got caught.

RK: Ah ha.

TB: And what happened after they got caught and many guys have been resistant. Occasionally, I run up against somebody who's resistant. So I have to, more or less, try to open them up. And again, this is not, because I want to tell anybody, it is because it fascinates me. It honest to God fascinates me and you probably picked that up perhaps from time to time in my letters. Over the years I've read everything I could get my hands on about it. The subject fascinates me. So when I'm confronted personally, not as a law enforcement guy, not as a detective, I'm not, playing that role, I'm playing the role of me intrigued about what they did and wanting to know every last detail about it. And sometimes they're not forth coming or they don't know how to tell me and so I have to help them tell me the kind of stuff that I want to know. Um...and I suppose the first thing that helps a guy open up that I've used to help guys open up to me and tell me things they really didn't want to tell me... one guy told me about, he would tell me about, all the gruesome details of all these murders, but, and he, and he felt absolutely no remorse. I mean, he would tell it to me in graphic detail but there's one he just, I could tell, he was holding back on this one situation. But he said, his story was well, this girl just, walked away and nobody saw her again. And it didn't sound right to me. I knew she didn't walk away. Ok. I just knew she didn't walk away. But I couldn't figure out why, I could tell, the way he was telling me, he wasn't opening up to me. He was telling me without hesitation about all these other cases but not this one.

RK: Ah ha.

TB: And so I just told him he was bullshitting me and that I knew what happened to her and I said, but I'm, but without accusing him I said, "well, listen, this is what I think...why I think people don't believe you when you tell them this. Because this is what I think happened. I mean, look at all these other crimes that occurred and yet you want people to believe this girl walked away and she never showed up, nobody ever saw her again... I said, "Now I could understand maybe why you're holding back on that one, I mean, there's nothing wrong with that man, I can understand it." And he started talking about it relating more or less, not trying to put him under pressure, but because I understood why he was holding back--because he had a relationship. All these other women were strangers. But this one woman he knew. And he felt justified in killing strangers. He did not feel justified in killing people he knew. He felt these were ok murders, this one was bad. And he could not talk about it.

RK: Which one was the one that broke his back? Was it the one he that he knew?

TB: That's the one that he still hasn't told anybody about. He's talked to me about it, in the third person.

RK: Ah ha.

TB: He finally got, and he finally started asking me questions. He said, "Well, what would happen if they found a body that was like this and like that, what do you think people would think?" He was worried about what people would think of him. And this is a curious thing that you may have run into, that each individual can't be approached like in an FBI profile. He can't be approached as a disordered ... as a collection of disorganized characteristics. This guy had unique needs. And I had, when I was trying to figure out what happened to this girl, in just talking to him, not, again, not as an investigator, just as a curious individual, I had to find out what those needs were. And for him, his own view of the world was certain murders are ok and certain ones aren't. And I had to find out why wouldn't he tell me about this one. Why wouldn't he give me the

details on this one? And it, took us awhile at first talking generally about, you know, how our minds work and how I could understand why he might, think this was the case. But listen, I said, "you've already admitted to all these others. Why hold back on that one?" Then he says, "yeah, but people would think I'm a really bad person if they told me about that one. So he had to work through all this guilt he had about this one versus all these others. Thinking that people would view him more negatively believe it or not, for this one murder than for these other twelve or thirteen. And this is something he held like a, like a secret locked away in his chest. And it was logically a foolish kind of reservation on his part because no one would think any...think he was any more horrible than they already thought he was. But in his own mind that was what was holding him back. And this is what I found in a lot of guys that I've talked to. There are some things they'll talk about and some things they won't. And they have a particular view of the world that you have to discover. Why are they holding back? Why does this one guy, for example, not want to talk about the twelve and thirteen year olds he killed and he may have killed a dozen, but he'll talk about all the prostitutes he killed. Because in his own mind killing all the young girls that he got at roller skating rinks was bad. The prostitutes off the street corner he'll tell you about in a minute. Ok. He had a ...his particular morality of murder, if you will ...was such that he could talk about some but not others. He could tell you the truth about some but not others.

RK: How does a police officer use that in a situation? Should we ... should he be expecting that he'd be interviewing someone that's murdered x number of people is going to have some of those emotions about several of those victims or one or two or?

TB: Sure. He's got soft spots. I meanI'm -- the Green River guy has soft spots. Some of those victims he'll find, he wouldn't have a feeling for in the world. And others, he probably feels bad about. It's hard to say. I mean, I'm guessing. But somebody that you'd feel easier, it'd be easier for him to talk about others and harder to talk about some. And not knowing, you know, the way this man thinks, it's impossible really to speculate at this time just what particular thought patterns he's responding to. What needs he has in terms of just relating to what he's done. But that can become fairly obvious to you ... to a

person over a period ofyou see, I had the luxury of living with these guys. So I could live with the guy. For instance ... a Bobby Long. Ok. I wanted to know exactly what he did ...even though he'd already told the police. And so if you live with a guy for a few weeks I can figure out well what's going on in his head. And he knew where I was coming from also. I mean, he had an idea. A lot of people who come to me have read about Ted Bundy so they know what... You know, they have an image or an impression of what I'm about. That may help them open up some too.

RK: Have a lot of them read these dime novels that have been written about you?

TB: Probably ... Probably, yeah. They all have as a matter of fact, and to one extent or another. And that kind of gives them, I mean, a sense, at least, an impression of, let's face it, of camaraderie and that may not be the right word, but you know what I'm getting at.

RK: Ah ha.

TB: This guy will understand. Or, sharing, like a kid... like a cat that brings the mouse home, you know. Sharing those experiences which he could probably never share with anybody, which he has ...and I've had people tell me things. They said, listen, nobody could understand this. I've never run across anybody I felt I could tell this to without either feeling like they'd turn me in. One thing they know about me is they can trust me because there's nobody the state of Florida wants more than me. So they know I'm not about to turn them in. And of course, in reality, I wouldn't turn them in if they told me about what they did and told me about things that the police didn't know about. A second thing is some of ... one in particular felt the need to tell me because he...it was a burden. He'd never been able to talk to anybody about it for fear they'd turn him in. Or they wouldn't understand or they would judge him. But when he talked to me he didn't feel like I would judge him. He was right. I wouldn't. And he felt like I

would understand and he was right. I did.

RK: How does a detective talk to somebody without judging him?

TB: That's hard. That's very hard. I don't, I can't imagine. I mean. It would take an extraordinary individual.

RK: You talked, you talked earlier about the need to get to this person right away and to interview them in any situation or in most. What does a detective do to get in to that same sort of rapport that you have there?

TB: It's scary.

RK: They're not Ted Bundy.

TB: The scary thing is you have to have real empathy. Real ... not phony. You don't ... not just calling a guy by his first name or shaking his hand or giving him a cup of coffee and going through and offering him cigarettes and going through all the standard procedure of putting a guy at ease, which is important. But there has to be a real empathy which, impossible as it may sound, lacks judgment, lacks – I mean, how do you detach yourself and say "this guy did these things which I consider to be horrible and repulsive and I've seen the impact it has on the community and the family" and how do you detach yourself from all that? And all the personal stuff and just really try to get into the guy's head without these barriers. My advantage in talking is, in talking to the guys that I've talked to over the years is that I don't have those barriers. Still, I encounter -- I don't have those barriers that I've erected between myself and the other person....still I encounter barriers from time to time that they've erected

between every anyone ... about knowing the real story.

RK: Right.

TB: And that's something that's as I said before, a curious thing. Even when they do...sometimes a guy does open up to me and tells me about stuff. I can tell sometimes he's lying to me, that he's not telling me the straight story. And I know what that's about too. That's because this guy has lived with this terrible memory, has lived with these urges and has lived with his behavior for so long and has had to keep it secret just for ... just to be able to survive. Just to be able to survive. Let's say a guy has been out there for seven, eight years, periodically doing something, killing people. Now, from the very time that behavior sprang into his brain at some point, for whatever reason, he had to more or less keep that to himself. He couldn't go around telling people, "Hey, listen I'm..., this is what I've been thinking about." Before he ever did anything. Ok? "I've been thinking about going around and killing people. I mean, I've been reading these books and I've been having all these strange urges." No, nobody is going to go around announcing that, just for fear of the fact that people will reject him, which they probably would. Right? So in order for this guy to be socially acceptable, to be able to just perform his normal life, he's had to erect a security barrier. He's had to keep these thoughts and later be acting out of these thoughts, tight to himself, and share them with no one because if he did he knew what would happen. He'd be turned in and arrested and I mean I'm talking in generalities now, but I've encountered this in people ... I've encountered guys who have held this secret for so long and so tightly even when it really didn't make any difference any more that they told anybody, they couldn't let it go. Because the psychological barriers, those, the mental apparatus that had been in place for years, was so powerful against revealing this to anyone under any circumstances that they just couldn't bring themselves to share it. Even though they may have wanted to ... in some ...on some level. I mean, the secret, if you can look at it from a lay person's point of view, their secret was so terrible that they couldn't reveal it. Well, that's a judgmental kind of thing. To this guy it's just something that he was so used to keeping to himself, just for his own self-preservation, and this, the way that his thought patterns had to be so tightly controlled, that even when the day comes for him to talk about it, it becomes

very difficult. Not because , necessarily he doesn't want to talk about it, 'cause he can, but he really can't open up. It's become....oh, it's...I don't know if I am explaining this, but I run into it many times and I know how that is.

RK: What is ... then are you saying the detective cannot break that barrier?

TB: Well, each person is different and they have soft spots. And I'm not saying everybody is like this. I mean, there are some guys that are just going to come out and tell you, under the right circumstances. And I think Bobby Long is a good example of that. And the reason why I think Bobby Long was so forthcoming was because he'd only been at it f or a few months. I knew one person in particular who was out there on the streets for seven years. His very first murder was a double ... very first murder he admits to, was a double murder. Seven years before he was caught. Now, he was a very busy person over the years.

RK: Comment to you or the police?

TB: No, to the police.

RK: To the police.

TB: To the police. And he only scratched the surface with the police. Cause he was handled so badly. Oh, it was just tragic the way he was mishandled. He had a deep-seated need for approval, which is why he talked to police at all. But they, they really did exploit him, and they traumatized him to the point where he just stopped talking to them. But he wanted to be accepted. He wanted to be one of the guys. He, to this day he feels more comfortable with the police than he does with inmates. But the system's gotten a hold of him. Course he won't talk to anybody anymore. But I'm saying, he'd been at it for seven years, at least before he was caught. So, to survive f or that long with those kinds of secrets, those very terrible kinds of secrets , at least terrible in terms of most people's

perception, he had to have erected this mental barrier within himself about talking about this stuff. Whereas, someone like Bobby Long who went through a series of incidents and then like I said, in June or July started killing people and was apprehended in November, he only had really six months with, you know, a period of only six months where he'd been involved in this before the police caught him. He just opened right up. I think it has a lot to do with how long a person has had to live with this. I think it has a lot to do with how long a person has had to live with this. For instance, the Green River guy at this point if he's still alive and he's still out there somewhere, he's going to be a tough nut to crack. Just because ... not because he is intrinsically opposed to talking with police, although he may be... but because he has lived with the knowledge that you want from him for so long and had to guard it so closely. I mean, like this is the most precious information in his life. If he would reveal any of it he'd be a goner and he knows it. So he's had to keep that more secure than any secret he's ever had. Keep it to himself. And he's ... and he lives with that day in and day out to the point where it's going to be hard for him if he ever really was in that position to talk about it, to talk about it. You see what I'm getting at?

R: Ah ha.

TB: Whereas if you'd snatched him back in August or September of '82, and he'd only been at it for a few months, the likelihood of him opening up and really just telling everything without a lot of strenuous interrogation would be pretty good. So, I think that's one dimension of what you face with the Green River guy now is that he's lived with this for so long. It's going to be hard for him to talk about it under the best of conditions. But, the extent that you can take the time to talk to him, not just over the course of a few hours, but it, took me days, taken me days sometimes, coming at this guy a little bit at a time. Just one question. I might just ask this one guy who I told you has had it for seven years, I might just ask him one or two questions one day and I might, wait three or four days before I come back to him. Very gently. And I would catch him with two different stories. And I knew one story was true and one was false. And I'd make him admit to the true version to help us get into, into what really happened. Or talk about some things that I've experienced that might help, that he might be able to relate to. Just to know. As a detective, I would come across, whenever possible if I thought, and I think more often than not, I would try to come across as somebody that would, had known a lot of people who had done this. Who's

investigated a lot of cases like this, who understood what was going on here. Who understood the kind of thought processes, the kinds of motivations that lay behind, that would compel a person to kill another person like that. And not just one ... but one after another.

RK: Ah ha.

TB: Because I think if -- what has impressed me about....I've talked to is they have a need to be understood, these burdensome secrets they've kept so long. But they don't want to share them with just anybody. They want to -- if they're going to talk about them with anybody, they want to talk about them with somebody who is not going to judge them. Who's going to understand this bewildering, probably this bewildering, experience that they've been going through. I mean, I'm not saying I understand it. But it's an awesome thing for a guy to confront. And if they can talk to somebody they feel will be able to say I'm not saying congratulate them, but say that they understand, that they know they have a good feeling for what's going on in a man's life ... who does these kinds of things.

RK: Ah ha.

TB: Then you have the best chance, I think, of settling the guy down to the point where he feels free to tell things which, which, he's kept to himself for so long.

RK: How do -- in most situations though you're going to have a detective that does not have that experience. He's been restricted by his own inexperience. He's never talked to anybody ...maybe he has talked to one killer in his time and that is it. Then all of a sudden he gets a case like this where there could be three or four murders and they have arrested a suspect or they're going to interview somebody as a suspect. They may not have any PC to arrest him at all. But just

by virtue of the circumstances the guy's a suspect and he could be the killer. Approaching somebody who could be the killer and not knowing for sure if he is...

TB: Not knowing for sure. Yeah, that's a different situation than I'm talking about.

RK: It's different than that. Yeah, right.

TB: 'Cause I -- this guy's already here. They're already in prison. Yeah, sure, it's a different prescriptive entirely and I don't, there's no, there's no sure answer, but I'll tell you what, in my experience I guess there's all kinds of theories that detectives have about what works. But, and maybe coming on real strong and real hard and saying "you know you did it. You might as well tell us." Maybe that ...I'm sure it's worked for some people from time to time. But, in my experience nothing will turn, will turn me off, were the kinds of, that the people that I know of more than somebody ...than a detective that comes on too hard. Because implicit in there is a lot of judgmental stuff and that would, generally, I said generally, tend to put a guy off. 'Cause he's not ... he knows, again, you have to sense, you know, if the detective is inexperienced it may be is an intuitive kind of guy and can sense what's going on in the mind of the man he's trying to question. We'll deny that he's the kind of guy who can be intimidated to the point where he opens up and then once he's opened up then you can gently pull it out of him. But I'd say from my own experience that if a guy if the detective comes off just willing to talk, someone's that is just willing to talk and not come on real strong, but that's where he can use his skills as a questioner and interrogator to develop certain avenues, certain kinds of information that he wants.

RK: Let me go up and talk to that guy a second. I wanted to show you a couple of questions in here, just soone of, a lot of the big things are victim/offender relationships. They are one thing that people seem to use statistically for

comparisons. And we're trying to get some view of what this particular category would look like. And essentially we've come up with this. But you can't cover every category, but do you see anything in there that would especially, in the unknown categories, like first-time acquaintance, total stranger or casual acquaintance, is there another one that you can think of that would be more appropriate to use in those circumstances? I mean, we've got hitchhiker in there and we got prostitute. I just coded a case the other day and it was the mother's ex-boyfriend that actually killed the daughter. We don't have a category for that in there, yet it's a very prominent category that we're going to add to this.

TB: Ah...

RK: But I'm really interested in the categories of not too much of those that know each other and are really close intimates and things like that, but we've got a hazy area here wherewhere liability of those categories are....

TB: Well, there's a category here of where the offender knows of the victim but the victim doesn't know the offender.

RK: Ah...

TB: Let's say he's seen her in ayou see ...she's a clerk in a store. So he knows who she is but she doesn't know who he is. That is that. Or, he sees her name and picture in a newspaper. So, he knows ...I mean...he puts her under surveillance...or attracts her and trails her for a time. Again, that's...then he's not a total stranger. He's not a first time acquaintance. She doesn't know him. He's not even a casual acquaintance, but you know, this is a situation where...I mean, if you know at all ... I'm saying.

RK: We're probably not going to know that unless he says it.

TB: You're probably not going to know that. Yeah. Exactly.

RK: Or unless somebody else has seen him stalking her, and we can't prove that she knew him.

TB: Yeah.

RK: Like we had that bus driver that stalked the one gal on the bus. She took his bus all the time. And parked the Metro bus and walked, followed her home.

TB: Is that right?

RK: Yeah.

TB: Oh....that's pretty bold.

RK: Yeah.

TB: He didn't have much of a career there I imagine.

RK: Ah, no. No, he didn't. He was caught real quick. But that's an interesting category. If we can....

TB: Well, a lot of these you won't know until you've either nailed the guy or he's told you like....

RK: Right. Cause we're going to be covering all of the solved cases as well as those that are unsolved . So we' ll know at least from what the case reflects. Now the only thing we're judging from is what is in the file. We're not interviewing the offender. We're not interviewing the detectives unless we really have to for some reason. But we ...

TB: It makes a great deal of difference though from M.O. whether or not the guy has previously selected this person as a victim. I mean previously. By previously I mean days or weeks in advance.

RK: Ah ha.

TB: Versus whether or not he's just, kind of randomly come up, she's just kind of walked into a situation where he's never seen her before but he's sort, of either waiting here or looking there or looking for something. Like a hitchhiker.

RK: Ah ha.

TB: I mean, these kinds of thoughts come to me when I look at this.

RK: Well, the first time acquaintance to me is somebody who meets somebody in a bar and, you know, they're bantering each other's name around. Everybody can hear...the bartender's hearing them. They're having a good old time and then you know, it's the first time. And then, he ends up murdering her that night. And he's got ten thousand witnesses as to his acquaintanceship, you know.

TB: Right.

RK: So there really is an obvious, witnesses to the....

TB: But would you call first time acquaintances in a situation where a guy walks up to a woman he's never met before and flashes a police badge and says, "you know, you're a prostitute, you're under arrest, come with me. I mean, that's...

RK: I'm not so sure unless there's a lot of other witnesses around and stuff who could verify that...

TB: I mean, she would be a total stranger, maybe not, but let's assume that she was a total stranger.

RK: She would be in that instance, right?

TB: Yeah.

RK: And you don't have much of a foreplay area here....

TB: No.

RK: In your conversation. You know, it's immediate, blunt, see her standing on the corner go right up to her and flash the badge.

TB: Yeah. But I say it certainly has a lot of use for a lot of categories there. I mean, you're probably going to find something will fall through the cracks no matter what you do. But that's really complete.

RK: Well, you know, we could compare things across virtually any of these fields. We can go to the clothing left at the scenes. We can go to the types of death. We can go to the weapons used. And you begin to see patterns. Like when the son kills the mother. You know, it's obvious to me what's happened here. Most of the time there aren't any firearms. There's knives, strangulation, stuff like that ...more physical contact. And that type of thing will be significant in this category. And I think that when you talk about wives killing husbands, you know, nine tenths of the time there's a gun involved. There's something handy. That's right there. And they start shooting. And the husband's dead. Or it could be even in some circumstances, depending like it's in the kitchen, you know, sudden grabbing of a steak knife, wailing on him, is a very real --course has to do with location too. That steak knife has got to be available, any place else ... but in the bedroom, where the husbands have been found dead, traditionally, he's been shot by the wife. So, that could be significant in this category. We don't know that yet, but just from my experience, that's what seems to happen. That's what comes to mind when people start talking about categories and how they get killed and what kind of weapons they use and you know.

TB: Well, and since, from what I understand the statistics are, most people, most victims of homicide knew their.... I say, knew their killer. I say knew, I mean, knew the person before it happened. Then, certainly most of your homicides

would fall into these categories.

RK: Well, that is, I think that is a crucial one because I think there is data in some cases where we're going to find that out that the offender is going to have given a statement and that will be in there. Now, whether it's true or not, we don't have anybody to verify it, but as long as it's there we can record it.

TB: Well, yeah.

RK: More than likely it is true.

TB: Well, your study here is covering all types of homicides and that vast majority which, as you know, involved victim and offender who knew each other. Of course, the ones, the more spectacular ones are those like the Green River killings where in all likelihood the Green River killer did not know, probably did not know, the prostitutes and young women involved. So they would fall under, somewhere in here. Either casual or first time or something. So, you probably have the bulk of your cases covered in those first couple dozen categories.

RK: Yeah. Well, that's what we're mainly concerned with is that...we...if we're going to find a category where we have twelve hundred, five or six that appear to be alike, we want them to be in here so we can computer check. When you start putting other and then you have to specify, any time you see a line and you have to specify in here, so the terminology used by say ten or twelve different coders could be different, even though it may be defined in the code book as to what this category means in generalities, it won't tell them how to express, you know, the real victim/offender. Now this question, "What was the relationship between the victim and offender?" specifies that more than likely you're coming in from the offender's point of view, anyway.

TB: Essentially you already know. You should have a pretty good idea who the offender was. The ones you're kind of worried about are the ones where you don't know, unable to determine.

RK: Yeah. And that more or less means unable to determine from the file because it's just not present there.

TB: Right. Or it's "other" or you don't know.

RK: Right.

TB: And it may be, it may be the fact that the mother did kill, the son did kill the mother, but you don't have any evidence to prove it.

RK: Here's another category. We had this big pie-in-the-sky idea that there were solved cases and unsolved cases. Ok. But now we have this view that solvability is on a sliding scale. But there's no really solved case and unsolved case, because in the minds of police officers they may know who did it. They have a lot of circumstantial evidence but they can't prove it. So, no arrest warrant is issued, no arrest is made. And that's one category of case where all of the evidence in that case emanates around the focal point of that one offender. See? If you compare the elements of that case versus one where the defendant is, say, was tried and convicted, you have a different kind of case. Say same type of circumstances, different kind of case. And all of the other categories are the same. Well, what is the difference between these two where he's known to the police but there's insufficient evidence to arrest, between those that he's tried and convicted? And what we're finding is that the actual unsolved cases in the literature, anyway, when you see the word unsolved, it's referring to those cases

that are one and two.

TB: Ah, ha.

RK: And so it's confusing to us, you know, by the rest of the social scientists in the world, if they really know what an unsolved case is. As an investigator, I believe this is an unsolved case also. I believe this is an unsolved case.

TB: It's known by the ----area.

RK: I believe this is an unsolved case. "It's known" means that you know his name. Not the fact that you don't know his name but you feel ...

TB: Ah, ha.

RK: Ok. So essentially, mine, which we will be able to, you know, take the computer and say, ok computer lump up one through five as unsolved. Compare that against cases, you know, six through fourteen. If you like that definition of solvability.

TB: Yeah.

RK: If you don't like that definition of solvability, what is an unsolved case? You know. What is it in your mind?

TB: Well, like you say, well to me an unsolved case is in a case Well, I'll start with one definition. Any case where there's not been an arrest and conviction, or confession. Now, that's pretty tight. Like you say, there's the informal definitions law enforcement people have that, the guy, he may never have been brought to trial, for one reason or another. But you know he's the one. He may have even confessed ...he may have a codefendant. And he may have taken a deal and they've given him immunity and testified against his codefendant. This guy would not have been tried and convicted of anything. Now I guess maybe that would fit somewhere in here. I mean, think of all sorts of different scenarios. But, I mean, how certain do you have to be? Because remember you told me there is some investigators that just get so dead set on their choice of a suspect. They just believe that's him. I mean, I'm...there may be some volunteers involved in the task force who would check "known to police but there's insufficient evidence to arrest." Ok.

RK: They would classify the Green River cases as number three.

TB: Yeah. Because they think that [suspect] is one or [another suspect] is the one. So you may have all different responses to this on the Green River case.

RK: Well, unfortunately, or fortunately, whichever way you want to look at it, the people that are going to be coding those cases are myself. So, more than likely, from my estimate anyway, from the evidence in the cases, the closest you can get is number two, is that the guy is unknown, but he has been seen. But partial descriptions, you know, eighteen months later people are asked to remember what the guy looked like. They last see the guy getting in a truck with a prostitute. You know, and you got the feelings that there are people that probably have seen the Green River killer. So you're going to check that block. This block means that he's not ever been seen.

TB: Yeah, right.

RK: But how good, you know, is the haziness between those two categories? Technically, I suppose the story I just gave you is number one also. They're not going to be any good to choose, pick him out.

TB: No, I guess it's a matter of semantics, with words "not seen" and "seen". To me, there's no question that the Green River guy has been seen. I think the question here is where he's been...is the description known to the police or not. Because in every case the person's been seen. I mean, there's not a case where a serial murderer was not, the murderer, whoever he was or she was, was not seen. They've all been seen, if you know what I mean. Do you mean seen at the scene of the crime?

RK: Right. Right.

TB: Seen with the victim and reported to the police?

RK: Augh...

TB: That kind of thing. But you know, I know what you're getting at there. I certainly don't want to quibble with you about terminology. But ugh...

RK: Well, I'd like to quibble about it because we got to define this stuff.

TB: Yeah, because in every, you know, this....there's not a murderer out there that not been seen, probably. Whether or not they've been in...whether it's been

at the scene of the crime or in the company of a victim. They're probably rare cases.

RK: See, we have to go through and we're going to , in a code book, ok, 69-2 is going to be defined as: Ok. What does seen mean? It means that he was probably seen by an eyewitness and a description was given.

TB: Yeah, okay.

RK: That fulfills several of the sightings of the Green River killer too with some of the victims. He has not been seen however at the scene of the crime.

TB: Yeah, he's not been.

RK: Which may be a different category. In fact that may be one we need to put in there, is the fact that he is unknown and he was seen, but he was seen at the scene of the crime.

TB: Seen where.

RK: Yeah.

TB: Where was he seen.

RK: The site where he was seen.

TB: Was it at the point where the victim disappeared from? Was it the point, at some point after the victim had been abducted , assuming this was an abduction, or after she was in the company or was he in the company of the killer? Was it the murder scene? Was it at the dump site? Was it somewhere going to or from the dump site? I mean, I don't want to get too technical but where seen? And I get to thinking you have somewhere in here where you go into, you know...

RK: The distance between the sites.

TB: The distances. But where, you know, you discriminate between...

RK: Dates, times and distances in each of those sites.

TB: Yeah. And discriminate where the victim was approached or last seen and where the murder occurred and where the body was dumped, if the different place, or if they're the same place, and that kind of thing. Well, that would all come into play here.

RK: Ah, ha.

TB: If you wanted to make it a bit ... get a bit more particular as to where they were seen.

RK: Yeah. Let's see the letter. Turn back. Here's the date, time parameters. The fact the victim last seen dates ... if they're known. Major assault. There can be a victim assault that would not kill, yet. That may be a separate time and date noticed evidencing the fact the death itself, the victim or body found – this means if the victim's found alive. This would mean, you know, when you were dead. Was the victim reported as a missing or runaway? This question I'm already going to change because in the case I just reviewed, they have, the victim was tried to be reported as missing by the relatives, but the police refused to take it. Now I think we need to know how many occasions victims have been tried to be reported missing and the police wouldn't take them as missing and then they are found dead. There was a big article in the Seattle Times a couple of months ago about this girl, who was harangued by this guy and she tried to report it over and over again, that hey, this guy was harassing me. What are you going to do about it? Then, she comes up missing. Then the police refused to take the report because she hadn't been gone for the length of time and the family hasn't done enough investigation to find out if she's in jail someplace or if she's off on a one-night stand. Then, she ends up dead. Then all these phone calls of course are recorded on the police communication lines and they're looking pretty silly about what's happened. But this does not capture that circumstance. This is “no, it hasn't” “yes, it has” and the day recorded if there is one. One thing recorded too is even though we have all these dates, how do these dates fit against the date the investigation began? Because we have days when, times when all of these may be in the distant past. And the investigation doesn't start until this phase. So, we're trying to find out, you know, how soon do the investigations start. Do they start mostly at the time the body is found? Probably so. There may be some rare occasions where they start here. But we can show there is a missing person investigation and somebody's seen it. And this date here corresponds somewhat with this one.

TB: It corresponds with 27.

RK: Yeah. Another interesting thing too that we've included is the date the victim was ID'd, because it governs practically all homicide investigations. I mean, traditionally, all the facts emanate from the things they can trace the last steps of the victim. You know, so....

TB: Knowing who the person is ... is essential.

RK: Yeah, yeah. And true, a few cases are solved with where the victim hasn't been identified, but they're usually caught right at the scene.

TB: Yeah, and they're unusual. Or, they're found like buried in the guy's back yard or something.

RK: Oh, yeah. Then there's, in conjunction with that, are the distances, the distance between the victim's last known location and all those points. Now, we don't know how significant any of these sites would be. "Defender's lodging site" was where did he live at the time the murder occurred? Was he living out of his car at 216th and Pacific South, or was he –this isn't the address where he lives. Like in maybe he lives in Salt Lake City, but the murder occurred in Seattle. Well, where was he living in Seattle at the time this occurred? Was he a hitchhiker or what was he doing ...how far away from this lodging site were all these circumstances? And each one is around three, the gamut of distance and time.

TB: I don't remember reading through this. I didn't mean it that ---it looked pretty thorough to me but I didn't sit down and really analyze each point. Trying to see what you were looking for. Now – fun to see the distinctions between, for instance, this category and this category. Don't they cover a lot of the same stuff?

RK: It may, if in fact these two are the same spot. The "initial contact" and "last seen". The victim's last known location. Like, you could have a gal that's last seen leaving her apartment. The initial contact probably took at 216th and the

highway at the bus stop, to be picked up as a prostitute.

TB: She may or may not have been seen at that point.

RK: Right. Right.

TB: And of course you'll only know this if that guy ever tells you.

RK: Right.

TB: In many cases.

RK: Right. And this loc....we may find her purse at this location too. Who knows? That happened in the past too, where she was actually last seen by somebody at this spot. But true, it may overlap some.

TB: Yeah. That's just...I see what you're getting at there and of course, distance between location of assault and assuming you know the location. Like in, again, the Green River case. Trying to use a specific case. A woman may have been assaulted and showed up dead. Are we talking about something other than a physical or sexual assault, you say? What are you getting at?

RK: More than likely it's a case where somebody actually sees an assault, right. And she's dragged into her car, and she's incapacitated from inside the car. Like one more is [offender] like we had. He was a prostitute killer. I mean, he was

seen throwing a girl in the trunk in Chinatown, in his car. And that was the assault place. But the actual murder/death site took place at the South Park Marina.

TB: So, in this case, well, in that kind of situation then this and this would be the same. Initial, well, at least this would be the same.

RK: These three maybe.

TB: Yeah.

RK: Right. They may all be the same. I think, you know, the big one, is necessarily the last one. You know.

TB: Death site and... yeah, well sure.

RK: Now, while we're on that subject I may as well show you something I brought that you might be interested in here. Now considering these sites we've discussed, the hypothesis is the more closely you can draw the relationships in time, distance and location. Like, if you were to look at this on a vertical scale from above, and all these were in line together, meaning that they all occurred at the same spot. Ok? And maybe the victim is at that spot and the offender is at that spot. The solvability of that case is high. As these begin to spread out in time and distance, the odds of solving the case becomes much higher or much less.

TB: Yeah, right.

RK: Because, suddenly, where you have it all in one spot, all in one neat package inside a house and the offender hands the gun over to the police as they contact at the door, that's one circumstance. But where you start to have cases where I suppose, as in the Green River case, all of these are spread out. They are spread out so far that the odds of solving that case are very difficult, you know.

TB: If he'd have been dumping them in dumpsters around the airport, or in alleyways, or you know, parking lots, in all likelihood he'd been arrested long ago. Just because of the distances, people would have been more aware and just the whole thing would be more compact. Somebody would have been more likely to have seen him dumping the body, for example, or they would have been found more quickly and when they're found more quickly there'd be more evidence and the closer the discovery of the body would have been to the time of disappearance, more people would have gone forward to see that, to say they saw something. You'd have found more physical evidence; fingerprints, footprints, tire prints. All these things.

RK: You have the freshness of the evidence too.

TB: Yeah. Yeah.

RK: And I think that, you know, if there is a long distance time feature here...

TB: Yeah.

RK: Maybe we'll find that in most of the murder cases, you know, these, these, and these are probably all together. But maybe this is the crucial factor here. The distance and the time from the death to the body recovery site. Or, from whatever the initial contact site is or last scene site is, the body recovery site. Maybe this, this and this are all the same spot.

TB: Ah ha.

RK: And could be. But maybe say this is inside a car, this might be inside a car also. And this might be dumped out in the woods. But, I feel, anyway, if we can demonstrate that all of these appear to be a row and put all those little boxes right on top of each other, you're looking at a solved case. And a more likely solved case. Now as they begin to spread out, the more difficult it becomes to the police. Because look at all those crime scenes.

TB: Yeah.

RK: They're a lot more people to talk to and it's just a two-man tandem working the case and you have this spread out...you're probably approaching it wrong. If you have no, if you know that all these are spread out, you're going to have people here, here and here.

TB: And people, prospective witnesses, who are the most, probably the most potent source of information, at least one potent source, are not going to realize they're witnesses because there won't be any publicity about this crime that they'll be able to relate to what they saw last night or a few hours, or days before yesterday or whenever. It'll just fade in the memory. I'm sure lots of people saw the Green River guy with, for instance, use a prostitute, either approaching them or getting into a vehicle or whatever. But at that time, they just didn't really see it as being significant, meaningful. There wasn't any struggle. There wasn't any

weapon. It wasn't anything that they would want to remember.

RK: Right.

TB: But there are a few cases as I recall that happened during that period of time, back in '82, prior to the Green River murders that the bodies were found a short time after they disappeared. These are not officially on the Green River list but they happened in the Seattle/King County area. I think one, one young girl's was found in a dumpster somewhere not long after...

RK: Right.

TB: That's still blank.

RK: Right.

TB: Well ...

RK: The fact that these are close together and not on top of each other is a problem already. Because, that one you're talking about especially, I mean, we're talking about a distance here between where this was and the body recovery site was, it's probably fifteen miles. The initial contact site, we don't know, we don't know where that is specifically, but if that is any indication, then she's five or six miles away from this site. So, as much as that, this, this, and this appears to be all in that dumpster or at the back door of the Magnolia Hi-Fi there in Ballard...this, this is really distance from this one. In distance and time too.

We're talking about, I think a couple of days too, between these two. And the distance involved is, you know, fifteen miles.

TB: Well, take those other, look back a little more. I remember you sent me a list of unsolved homicides of women in the King County area.

RK: Ah, ha.

TB: I think it was '76 through '82 or '83. And there were a number of women who had been found in their homes, in bed.

RK: Ah, ha.

TB: I think that's real close.

RK: Yup.

TB: And I don't know...have those ever been solved?

RK: Ugh, in fact No. One of the things that go into this too is the amount of work you'll see....well, you've already seen in the rest of the forms how much work the police did, you know, to identify the offender. And one of the problems, at least...there were three cases like that, strangulations, females, near in their own home, in their own apartment or condo. One of which, in my mind, could have been solved. I mean, the police got to a guy soon enough but they let

the contamination of two suspects interfere with both investigations. And they put a, one guy kills himself, ok that they approached.... leaves a note, "I'm sorry that Susan is dead. I loved her very much." He didn't say he did it. Ok? Then you got a guy that comes into them saying, "I'm picturing myself killing Susan." He was a friend who saw her that night, both of them saw her that night. Now, something drastically went wrong in that interview process of these two guys where they're not to have hashed this thing out right off the bat. Ok? So, I'm not so sure that, you know, this isn't shoved over on top of the pile a little bit. Maybe half way there ... by virtue of the experience of the officers handling the case. I had, I teach a class where I have detectives bring in an unsolved case. And this one particular agency, Kent Police, is where this one thing I'm talking about occurred, in their jurisdiction. Three guys had gone through the class. All three of them had chosen this particular case to review and critique. So, each time they'd come out of there after the class was done - It's kind of like a college class. It lasts eleven weeks and they're required to study other solved cases to see how they got solved over time. They're not the "gim-me's" that you get every day but the ones that took an effort to solve. I've got all kinds of examples of them and they go over and they see where they could have been solved sooner and things like that. But the ones that have taken that case and looked this over were so frustrated with the politics in the department at the time, the abilities of the people that were in there, and you know, how can they investigate. The number of people that were in the crime scene were atrocious. I mean, it was just the whole damn population went through there before they had a chance to do a real crime scene investigation. There's a chance that the offender probably shit at the crime scene and the evidence was there. And because of the way they handled it you know, that evidence was destroyed. So it's really kind of diabolical.

TB: And that's, I guess, that's one of those....

RK: Typical.

TB: I'm trying to think of the scientific word, you know, you go through...you

take a course in the scientific method. The thing, the uncontrolled variable, is the fact that no matter how good your information is and how accurate your study is and how much information, how many computer assisted investigative programs you have ... they're only as good as the guy who is doing the investigating. I mean, you know, there's a great deal of variability in the capability between one investigator and another. I mean, they're only as good and as alert as the investigator on the end who is responsible for the case and is willing to apply this information the way it needs to be applied to make the best use out of it. And if you have politics and you have sloppy investigation and you have poor crime scene analysis and all that, then the best information in the world is useless.

RK: Well, this is just one example. But it gets you thinking...can you take this pack with you?

TB: Oh, yeah.

RK: Are you allowed to do that?

TB: Yeah, I can go...

RK: Just give it to them when this time is up?

TB: Yeah.

RK: Cause I'd like you to sit and think about it. And develop...these things

are...probably all have direct relationship. The solid lines. And the dominant lines are there...may be a relationship there or there may not be. There're definitely routes to and from that the offender took here that we know happened. Ok? This maybe slid over to this box. That's why it's on dotted lines. But, it's just...there's no theory of investigation, technically. I mean, you use many theories when you go in, but there's no systematic way of approach. The traditional was that everybody kind of works from the crime scene out, and one of the things I've noticed about detectives is that they process crime scenes now very good. I mean, once the initial clutter is over with and everybody gets the hell out, they do a pretty good job of collecting evidence. But, one of the problems they have, is they don't think of, at the time you know, who's looking for the killer? What evidence is there? You'll see six or seven hours go through an investigation file where they'll have done this thorough crime scene investigation and there hasn't been one creative thought go into, wait a minute, we just found this phone number here. Let's find out who it belongs to right now, not two days later, and go put your hand on the hood of his car as you're walking up and knock on his door, see if it's warm. Ok? So, who's looking for the killer at the crime scene? And so many times, you go through those reports where you've got a found body someplace with no offender in sight, and there may be some very real suspect information left behind. It could be in the form of, you know, just a phone number and a first name left on the top pile of a desk. Like we had a coin dealer who was murdered one time and this guy called him about negotiation of coins – he was supposed to call him back for an appointment. And here he was, right on top, first name, phone number. And you look at that and you say, no, it couldn't be. It couldn't be this easy, and it was. And it was just something that you had to get right then. Fortunately, it was something we could do because we ended up getting close enough to him and we could serve the warrant. In any event, yeah, you're right. It does depend on the ...

TB: Well, it's only as good as the...

RK: Ability of the detectives that work it.

TB: All this arsenal of information and all these resources are only as good as the guy at the end of the line.

RK: Yeah.

TB: You know, there is something, talking about the crime scene, which happens to be a favorite topic of mine. Because I mean, I'm fascinated by pictures of crime scenes because ... for a variety of reasons. One of them is, I mean, from an investigator's standpoint it seemed to me that this is probably the only place that an investigator can stand and put his feet right there on the ground or wherever it is and say, "I know that the guy I'm looking for has been right here. And I may not know he's been anywhere else, but I know he's been right here. And why here?" And literally, I mean, I guess this sounds, it's certainly no panacea, but try to put yourself in the....mind of the man who chose that spot. Now, if it's a house, it's the bedroom of the victim that's one thing. But if it's Star Lake or wherever ...why Star Lake? Imagine the guy driving there with the body and himself in a vehicle , in the truck or wherever. Look, the guy could use a taxicab. Imagine looking for this place in the dark. What's going through his mind? What's he looking for? Why this place? Is he looking...if a car drives by...is he taking precautions? Does that go through his mind? Is he drunk? Is he high? Is he agitated? Is he, you know, what are all things? Does he go back to the site? I mean, Star Lake, again...we're focusing on something real. It helps to put it in context. But for instance ... the Green River site. Something...I would not be surprised if this guy was going back to these sites on...to check them over. He was going back there either to check them out to make sure he hadn't left anything there the night before. He may have dumped them in the dark and wanted to make sure that, you know, a charge slip didn't fall out of his pickup truck, you know. Or he may be going back to look at the bodies or do something with the bodies, or "get off" on the scene, or whatever. So little has been done with that aspect of mass grave sites in serial murder cases. I think it would be fascinating. That's why I suggested the FBI to go over the questionnaire and find out what their 36 guys, for example, what, if any, which ones, if any of them, went back to the scenes where they dumped the bodies and why and when and what did they do? Why and how long were they there? And so on. But just trying to recreate that. And I know it's very hard. And maybe it doesn't appeal to

you as an investigator to try to get the feel, even if it's completely fictitious, a feel for that guy picking up that prostitute near the airport. And you know, what's going through his mind? Where does he take her? What's his first move?

RK: I think that any good investigator knows, approach every crime scene like that. I mean, even the least experienced guy. I remember when I first started, you know, you're always asking the other guy that's there, "What do you think of this?" "What significance does this have?" You know. "Why did this happen this way?" "Where can we find this guy if he was just here an hour and a half ago?" "Where can we find him now and how are we going to get to it?" You know. And those types of things are I think highly necessary. I don't know how many times I've gone out to the middle of Star Lake Road and just stood there and watched and looked into the trees and down the road, and noticed how quiet it was. That in the pullout where one body was found ... it's obvious to me why that pull out was important to him. Because he could hear everything coming and going you know, a mile down the road or a mile up the hill. Either direction. And if not... But the crime scenes. How do you do that with bones?

TB: Do that with bones. What do you mean?

RK: Well, the, having a fresh body at a scene is a whole hell of a lot different than having bone sites. You know, where the guy's been gone for months.

TB: It's been a period of weeks or months and months since this last victim that you know of, anyway. Well, first of all, let me ask you. Do you videotape these scenes, these sites, when you've found them? Have you videotaped...taken various shots in the road up and down the road and so on and so forth?

RK: Right.

TB: I think that would be a potent tool. I'm not sure how to use it, but talking about next time you get a guy you'd like to... although I don't know how much you feel you can give away. I mean, you might be nervous if you show this guy too much. You might be giving away information they might use to confess to something he hasn't done, but it certainly, for the person who did it, to see on videotape, that these, some of these sites might be something that would loosen them up. It would be something that would start to get his mind into that groove, seeing scenes and sites that maybe he hadn't seen for a long time. It would bring back to memory, vividly, these sights and smells and sensations that he had had at the time that he was disposing of the victim's body. Believe me, those are extremely powerful recollections for him.

RK: Ah, ha.

TB: These videotapes would certainly clue, cue that, might cue a lot of that in. And you wouldn't...might not...you might be able to show them some of it without giving so much away that you felt that you might be tainting anything. But that would certainly be interesting if that....anyway, you're talking about bone sites. I mean, how...

RK: How do you get a feeling for the killer out of a bone site?

TB: Well, it's still...

RK: Especially in the woods, you know. Most of these are reasonably remote areas. There's not a lot of traffic.

TB: I don't know...you just ... it's ...I guess it has a lot to do with what you take there in your own mind. To me, just to be able to ... it wouldn't make any difference if it were a month, a day, or a month or six months. If I'd...if somebody would tell me that I was standing...I mean, the bones were found there, and then I was ... and I can stand there and try to recreate how he drove in and what he was looking for and how it'd be and what was he paying attention to, what was he seeing. Just try to get a feel for all that was going on in a guy's head. That's not going to break open, that's certainly not going to give me any specific clues, but to me there's a It's hard to explain, but for me there would be a

RK: Well, it's interesting because you can...

TB: To be able to put your To....to, get this feel of this man in a way that maybe other people who are less sensitive to what was going on there couldn't. What was going on in this man's mind, as he was... what was his state of mind? What was hewas he, as he picked up this dead body and began to carry her , drag it, it was...and get all those feelings. And try to get those feelings that he had. And I'm not saying that you can like a clairvoyant imagine everything going on in this guy's head. I'm not saying that at all. You know. But... I guess there's no substitute for it and I'm not telling you anything you don't know. And I don't know how much sense I'm making.

RK: Well, you know, I don't know. I probably sat or stood... even sat in some instances and there were probably 50 bone sites in my time. And most of the time I always felt that the killer was real remote in my mind. It felt like it was, there was such a distance there between what we had, a set of bones and it was so far back in time that it gives the feeling that you're way behind in the investigation. And that the murders are most clear to the person who engaged in it, not to the person who follows it up and looks at it, right?

TB: Well...this is true.

RK: Yeah. I...you look at it. I remember one guy that we had. His name was [redacted]. We found a set of bones. And the remoteness of that scene, very few bones were found and the victim classification was homicidal violence. Right? But few pieces of clothing found here and there. Stuff like that. And then we got a live victim one time that had crawled all the way out two and a half miles through the woods, nude, stabbed, laid across the Maple Valley Highway and finally when she was able to talk we started...all she could see was a light. Didn't know what direction she came from specifically. And, so we kept trying to find where this guy had taken her in the car. So we drove around, drove around and drove around and drove around. And finally we get on this road. And then it hits you. Before you even get up there you know she's going to see this same light at 10:30 at night. And there's no question in her mind. And she drove up...we drove her up to this spot and she didn't even need to say that's it or anything. I knew, cause I sensed it. It was the same spot where we'd taken this skeleton out before. And by the time we put together this case and the skeleton case, we didn't charge with the murderer of the skeleton. Only because we had the opportunity to take a living victim back to a spot, but at the time you find that one set of bones out there, it, you feel so distant and remote from any thought who the killer could be. I know my immediate thought is it's definitely not somebody new, you know. And so that's going to make it a hell of a lot harder and do we really care who this gal is because the bone find site is going to mean more to us than maybe who she is except it's going to lead us back to where he may have contacted her. But it's You really feel remote from anything...especially with these prostitutes. I mean, all of a sudden you're ... bingo...it's just...you don't even know where the death site was. You don't know where the assault site was. And many times you don't even have an initial contact site. You have a fact that they're missing from a particular location, but you know that's not the location where they met. And so the distance is really remote.

TB: Well, yeah. And I'm not saying that you can magically put yourself in this guy's mind and see things through this guy's eyes and come with, with his identity or even some really good clue of some sort. I guess, oh, the thing that could happen, what I guess I'm getting into is just getting a feel for what is, what could be going through this guy's mind in terms of why this place? If it's a mass

grave site or even if it's just an individual site. And did he pick it for a reason? Is this, especially in remote sites, I say remote or deserted or little known sites. Did he pick it for a reason? And getting back to one of my favorite topics again is, I think, I'm telling you, if I were an investigator and I, I would love to stake out that site, especially if it's fresh. I mean, particularly almost if it's fresh. Now, for instance, I understand that not too long ago there was another young girl found out by the airport, I guess a few months ago. Weeks ...months.

RK: Yeah. Months. There's been three of them.

TB: Now, we don't... there's no, certainly there's just no way of saying who's doing that other than to say you can't say it's the Green River guy. Who knows? But somebody, anyway, did that. And I, and you found them fairly quick. I guess they were not ...they were in bone, not the bones. There were...

RK: Right.

TB: Right. And, like I said before, I ...that kind of victim, I mean, a young woman found in a lonely area, I don't know...it doesn't have to be miles, it doesn't have to be up in the mountains, like you say, it can be around one of those, those places around the airport where there, you know, undeveloped places. But once you get a feel for that site, you know, what might be going through this guy's mind when he's approaching it or selecting it. Then staking it out becomes a little bit more, a little bit more effective and you have a feeling for how you're going to watch this place. If he can't see you when he comes in, the next time to either bring in another victim or checking the scene to see what's going on...I... I'm not saying... I don't like generalities, ok?

RK: Yeah.

TB: But I still believe, I still believe very strongly from what I know my conversations with others, that it's an enormously powerful inducement for a man to go back to the scene where he's dumped the body under these conditions. If nothing new, the other thing would be to drive by. See, umm, you know, whether it be to relive the experience, to check it out or see if the body has been found, or just this sense of...

RK: Or, to dump another body.

TB: Or to dump another body for that matter.

RK: Ah, ha.

TB: And we've talked about this, the considerations which seem to inhibit law enforcement, virtually all the time from being able to restrain itself to the point where they can leave a body alone for a while and just stake it out. But I'm telling you ...and I don't know if it's been done. Maybe it has been done. Maybe you've tried it. I don't know. But I think in a case like that where, particularly a case which has all the signature elements of a serial type murder, or a potential one which is potentially the serial murderer.... or any kind of murder for that matter, where the perpetrator has gone out of his way to dispose of a body in an out of the way location. I think there's a likelihood of him coming back for whatever reason, curiosity or some particular reason. It's probably higher than the probability of you finding a piece of evidence there that will lead you to him.

RK: You absolutely have to have a situation though where the killer knows nothing has been found there, right?

TB: Yeah. Yeah, that's ...

RK: He's not going to come back with ...

TB: Not this guy. Ordinarily, I mean, certainly not the Green River guy who's just simply to me has a ...has an intuitive quality about him which makes him very wary. At least he seems to me to have developed that over time. He may not have had it initially, although I think he learned pretty quick.

RK: I think if you look at, you know, the dates of discovery in comparison to where the next drop is, it's never in the same spot. So, he never goes back to a sport, at least to dump somebody, once it's been discovered. Like Star Lake Road. Even though the police didn't know all those other six bodies were there, he never dumped another body there after we found one in September of '83. They were all deposited before that time.

TB: Right. Exactly.

RK: As soon as we found it he went on to...

TB: Yeah. I'd have to see one of those maps that you all had with the numbers and the dates and all that. I once...I remember once, analyzing the pattern in which he dumped the bodies. But, the fact that he went, that he took the trouble, for whatever reason, to dump more ... to often times dump more than one body in the same location is significant. Now it's significant maybe just because he was just going to use up that site until, for whatever reason, he didn't want to use

it any more. Right? I think it's significant probably because he felt comfortable here, for whatever reason. He felt it was a good place to dump bodies and when it ceased to be a good place...although, that's not true either because he was using several sites simultaneously at once as I recall, before anything was discovered wasn't he?

RK: Right.

TB: I mean he had two or three, at least, that he was using, sort of distributing them around, you know, even before any remains were found. But the fact they were clustered like that is important. That he wasn't leaving them laying in alleyways or in dumpsters. That he was taking them somewhere and dumping them in clusters, I think is, says to me that he was probably returning. He was obviously returning to the site. And he was probably returning there not ... at times other than times had a body.

RK: When you talk about going back to the site now, are you talking about sites in remote areas? Like, you know [a large metro area] has 20 and some prostitutes that have been murdered but they were found like the next day. Would your advice to them be leave her there and stake her out? Or?

TB: If it's in an urban area, lots of traffic, like if the body is lying in a ditch somewhere along the side of a roadway, I mean, obviously that's not, you're not going to be able to do much there.

RK: Ah, ha.

TB: But if it's you know ... now there's no evidence, for instance, that I know of

that the Hillside guy, Bianchi and Buono were going back to a site. That I can recall, from what I read...but if the body is out of the way.

RK: But they were getting off on the police discovery of the sites.

TB: Yeah. The damn thing about these guys is, I mean, you look at it different from me. Right?

RK: Ah, ha.

TB: I mean Bianchi/Buono for example, you said that. And it's true. My position was, that as dense as Bianchi seems to be, seems to have been without his uncle, if they, if together they had taken more time to dispose of the victims they, and managed to stay together despite their stormy relationship, they could still be out there. Cause one of the reasons there was so much heat about those cases, one of several reasons but one of the main reasons was they kept finding bodies.

RK: Ah, ha.

TB: And that was creating a lot of publicity and a lot...and the more publicity, more intense the investigation became, if you will, these two guys poured into that, into torturing their victims ... went into disposing of them in ways they wouldn't be found, they probably would have lasted a lot longer. They just put a lot of heat on themselves. Even with that, nothing would have happened until Bianchi went off on his own and screwed up in Bellingham.

RK: Ah, ha.

TB: Nothing probably would have come of it if he could of ...well, he couldn't, so that's neither here nor there. But, I guess what I'm saying is that... I lost my train of thought. Alzheimers.

RK: But they didn't go back and...

TB: The Green River guy was going out of his way to put these bodies in places where they would take a while before they were found. That's obvious. I mean, that's very clear. But why? And I just think that to place those sites under surveillance, those kinds of crimes, whether it's a prostitute or whoever the victim is, if the site lends itself to the guy returning, and it can be staked out, they probably should be.

RK: I mean, would the guy like the Green River killer have an interest in typically when those crime scenes are left there's police tape around and, you know, they've taped off certain areas. Would he go back and see what they've done?

TB: That is something I haven't given a lot of thought to. I don't know. I don't have a feeling for that. I'm not saying he wouldn't. But again, because I feel he's....

RK: That's pretty risky.

TB: It is pretty risky and he's such a wary type individual. But he is pretty bold. He was pretty bold, at least in '82 and '83 when those...all the publicity about all those disappearances and he kept going back to the same area snatching people right out from under the noses of, what I would seem to be a pretty intense surveillance situation. He had to have a ... to be pretty bold too. But I don't think that he...I'm purely speculating, I don't think that he would go back to a site that had already been discovered. You know. I may be reading too much into ...to this kind of crime scene where you have the body of a young woman, like a prostitute. That's why I wish the FBI had asked a lot more questions about whether or not these guys ever went back to the crime scene or why they selected the crime scene or what....well, they asked a few questions about what they did there, but they didn't get into it very deeply. They certainly didn't ask a lot of questions about what they did and so on and so forth. And in cases like Green River, or cases that involve serial murder of the kind that the FBI was investigating, I think you have to see there's a dynamic kind of interrelationship between the perpetrator and even the remains of the victim. [FBI agent] likes to think that those types of crimes involve a very strong, possessive instinct. And that is the perpetrator gets off on literally possessing his victims. And I think that's certainly one way of looking at it and has validity. And that possession goes on past the point where the victim is killed. And theoretically, being and practically speaking, the perpetrator, the killer is still the only person who knows where the woman's body is. He's still in many ways of possession of her. And if that's his thing, and I'm not saying it and I don't like to over generalize, but if that's his thing, then going back and viewing the body or just being at the site might be something that he, you would get off on, vicariously if you will.

RK: Ah, ha.

TB: Now the Green River guy was so effective he didn't have to stand around and vicariously get off it seems to me. He just went out and snatched somebody. But there must have been a point where even he was so conscious of the publicity and of the heat and he said, you know, "I'd like to go out and do it today but, I ...mean, I just did one yesterday and last week and if I do it again...I mean, those things are...I mean, all hell will break loose and besides I, you know, they're probably looking for me out there. I just can't risk it." Well, you

know, who knows? He might have just hopped in his car and drove to Portland that day. But of...

RK: Ah, ha.

TB: Or he may have just said, "Well, I'll just get off and drive down to Star Lake. I dumped one down there a couple of days ago." See what I'm saying?

RK: Yeah.

TB: And it's sort of a way of getting some, not getting... satisfying himself along those lines.

RK: What do you feel that the police do wrong in serial murder investigations?

TB: Well, I don't...

RK: Maybe you want to divide that up. Like privacy analysis, suspect pursuit, eyewitnesses, investigative tactics...whatever you think. What do you think they do terribly wrong?

TB: I don't know if there's any...

RK: I mean, one time I heard you say that the one thing they should do is keep their mouth shut.

TB: Oh, yeah, yeah. That's a real good point. Yeah. Well...let me try to collect my thoughts here. I don't think there's any one thing, I mean, that stands out. I mean, one of Again, one of my pet, one of the things that, that constantly comes to my mind is how the crime scene is treated. But, we've been talking about that but, considering the disadvantage that police are in in serial murder cases because it's a crime between, usually between stranger on stranger situation and it's just...the contacts there are tenuous to nonexistent to be able to connect the victim to the perpetrator, at least directly. And it's a very...these things are very difficult cases to investigate. But I think that, in terms of publicity, yeah, I think that too often the police, from what I've seen, release too much information or talk too much about the case. Either release too much information or indicate they don't have anything. In both cases if the perpetrator is paying any attention to what's going on, he is going to know what, how to make his next move. I mean, if you got the sense the police don't know anything, or even if he sees, even if an investigator gives an interview and tries to get suave, get slick and infer they have something they don't, or say something ...say they don't have something when they do, in other words, try to manipulate the interview to send signals, false signals to the guy they're looking for, for whatever reason. That's pretty dangerous because again, you're sort of flying blind and if you send a false signal out there and he knows that you know it's false, you see he knows...if the information attributed to the police, he can gain a lot of stuff from it. And I just think that, that's certainly not to your advantage. If he knows you don't have anything, or, or, you think you have something that he knows you don't, he's emboldened. He's going to feel more confident. And, of course, maybe you want him to feel confident. But the danger is that if you try, if you try to manipulate him, you may be manipulating him...I mean, there's so much information you don't know that if you make a sort of a stab in the dark to try to trick him, he'll, he'll be able to...because there's so little you know about it generally speaking that he'll be able to tell that something is not right. So, I think except in rare instances where perhaps the guy has been in contact with the police through phone calls or letters or whatever, that the less said the better. There's just no question. I think that that's standard procedure, but I think there's a temptation because the police are under political constraints that they have to, that they...I think sometimes feel they have to say

something to the general public.

RK: Ah, ha.

TB: Well, certainly because...there's instances where they need the help of the general public. You need the help of the people on the streets. And the only thing you can do is give out information saying we think this guy is may be driving this kind of vehicle and is dressed like this. You got to take those kind'a of calculated risks. And it may be you're totally wrong. That "I wasn't driving that." "It didn't look like that."

RK: Is that why you say that it was a calculated risk? That he might not be driving that kind of car or he might not be dressed like that?

TB: Yeah. And he'll know that. And if you're right you'll scare the shit out of him but if you're wrong he'll go augh, they're on a wild goose chase. So these are, I mean, if you have a ...if the information is pretty unequivocal that... you have an eyewitness who saw the guy and you need more information for the hook, you make a public appeal. There are times for sure when you feel that kind of confidence. And that's what has to be done. But the gist, what I'm talking about is this general chit-chat that you see sometimes. You see sheriffs or their press assistants or someone in authority making statements that just seem to be made to mollify the press, just to satisfy the demands of the news media. Talking about things that don't serve any objective of the investigation.... Just

RK: Releasing too much stuff?

TB: Just releasing information which may be, which may or may not be the

correct... and the person who knows whether or not it's accurate is out there reading it. And, and that will either cause him...if it's Will either cause him to modify his modus operandi in such a way it's going to be harder to find. I mean, assuming this guy has the intelligence and the awareness to pay attention to what's going on. And I think generally speaking these guys do. It's a matter of self-preservation. Then, then it's probably wrong to send them that kind of information, saying we knew this, therefore you better change your style or chance is we'll catch you if you keep it up.

RK: How would you structure information releases?

TB: Well...

RK: I mean, if you feel, it would seem to me that if the police felt that if they really had a good description of somebody and they released it, that it probably would do some good. However, if they were wrong, then they're definitely barking up the wrong tree.

TB: Yeah.

RK: But if they really felt they had the right person, the right description, the right car and then they released that information to get the public to call in about similar people that would seem to me to be a valuable technique. But if they're wrong for some reason, then your premise is that the guy's off the hook. And then...

TB: Well, at least he thinks he is. And you think, he wants to know...I'm sure this, I'm sure that, unless the guy is totally irrational, he doesn't want to get,

doesn't necessarily want to be apprehended and you would like to know what the police know. Just from the standpoint of avoiding being apprehended, being caught. The more he knows about what you know, the ...generally speaking now, the more he knows about the police know, the more he knows what, you know, how to proceed in the future. Does he...can he go back to the same area or pick the same kind of victim or? I mean, does he have to be more careful? Does he have to change vehicles? Does he have to change his approach in some way? You know, should he go somewhere else for the time being? Change his, the kind of victim he's looking for? You know, assuming that he's capable of making all these rational judgments. And I'm sure there are limits to what, you know, to when and how that I can, a serial killer, can modify his behavior.

RK: Does, how about the non...I mean, you got a series of missing people for a while like in the Green River case, and there's really no discovery. And so there's nothing that can be released because the police don't even know that maybe they're missing, they might be missing from different jurisdictions. And each jurisdiction may have a missing person report on a person, but there really is no publication of the discovery because they haven't been discovered. There's no publication about missing. There may be, you know, two inches of article in the paper that somebody's missing.

TB: Ah, ha.

RK: There may be no fact that it's connected to any series of cases or anything. What ... What does a killer get from something like that because he's not getting any information. I mean, he...

TB: Well, he's not getting, he's not getting anything. Right. So he doesn't know. Put yourself ...try to put yourself in his position.

RK: There may be no fact that it's connected to any series of cases of anything. What, what does a killer get from something like that because he's not getting any information. I mean, ...he...

TB: Well, he's not getting, he's not getting anything. Right. So he doesn't know. Put yourself...try to put yourself in his position. Let's say, instead of dumping those first six girls in the river, first five girls in the river, the Green River guy just started dumping them around like he had been later on up in the mountains and willie nillie here and there around South King County, and I think I posed this type of hypothetical in a letter to you once...I mean...had there not been those five in the Green River, Lord knows how this thing would have unfolded. Right?

RK: Ah, ha.

TB: It would not have been quite so spectacular. It may have been many more months or years before any kind of pattern had been detected. You found a few bones one week and a few more bones the next. But put yourself in his position. He doesn't know what you know. He doesn't know even if you've found these women. Ok? Remember this guy is, I mean, I don't want to infer that he's all the time super curious, but wouldn't you be? Well, I mean, if you'd gone out and abducted a prostitute and done whatever you did to her and dumped her in the bushes somewhere in south King County and a week would pass and a couple weeks would pass. He'd heard nothing. Now, what would you be thinking? Now, would you be at least a bit curious if the police had figured out or even discovered the body? Would you be as curious if the body was still there or if the police are doing any kind of investigating? If for no other reason than that....I don't want to attribute too much intelligence to any one serial killer, but I think generally speaking that they have in common a desire to avoid detection. Maybe because, for whatever reason they like doing, or they're getting off on what they're doing, or they're compelled to do what they do and they want to keep doing it for whatever reason. With...there are exceptions. I'm afraid sometimes those exceptions have been taken for the rule to the point where there's this myth

that serial killers want to be caught. And I think generally speaking I don't see that. I see that as an exception. There are noteworthy exceptions...the daughter scribbles on the bathroom mirror "stop me before I kill again." And that just doesn't happen. I mean, very often. Ummm...so, you know. Wouldn't you be curious? Wouldn't you like to know that the police knew? You know, from your standpoint of before you go out again to snatch somebody else, wouldn't you like to know what the police know? So you could feel more confident about whether or not you, how long you could, how far you could push it, how often you could go out, how many you can get. This guy pushed it to the limit. I mean, I think you got this guy pushing beyond the limit. I mean, I'm kind of fascinated by just how much gall he had to keep going back and doing it again and again. Assuming it's one guy.

RK: Ah, ha.

TB: That's pretty...there's a lot of publicity. I mean, not...withstanding all the criticism about the lack of attention the news media gave these cases because they only involve prostitutes, there's a lot of publicity when you compare it to other serial murder cases. So yeah, I think that generally speaking the guy is real curious. Now, that doesn't mean that he had a morbid fascination with publicity or he gets off on the publicity. And I think you can probably get a good idea whether or not a serial killer is getting off on the publicity or once generate this kind of sensational publicity based upon how he disposes of his victims. If he disposes of them, you know, like the Hillside Stranglers did, out in the open where they could be easily found in a rather grotesque position, they...I think it's because everybody is looking. He's not looking to get clean away with it in the sense that he just wants the victim to disappear and nothing else. He doesn't want the victim to be found. But if he's going to the lengths the Green River killer went, then he's looking to dispose of the victims so they won't be found and you have to, I think the logical assumption is because he wants to keep doing it. And he's curious about what you know. He's curious about if anybody saw him contact the victim. If anyone found ... and what you found at the crime scene. I mean, did he leave anything? Did he leave any shred of evidence? Any hair? Any fabric? Any .. anything there. And that's one thing that came out of the publicity about that one suspect that was brought in and interrogated. Based

upon what he said, if I were reading that newspaper and I were the Green River Killer, I would just sit back and pop a beer and kick my feet up on the sofa and say, "Home free." Because, I mean the way they approached this guy was "we know you did it, we got the evidence." Well, you know words to that effect. I'm paraphrasing. Now, it's been a couple years since I've read it. But, what I got from all the publicity was they didn't have jack shit if they thought they could drag this guy in, if he wasn't the guy, the real guy knows they don't have Jack shit because they were putting that kind of pressure on this guy. If they had real good evidence they would have known he wasn't the one.

RK: That's true. That's true.

TB: And so I just sit back and say..."They don't have a thing cause if they did, they wouldn't have put that guy to that kind of pressure." That's the danger. And it was unavoidable. I mean, it wasn't your ...it wasn't the Task Force's fault in the sense that the news media really blew it all out of proportion. And if you have a good suspect you have to bring him in, but the danger is if he goes to the news media and tells the news media what you told him, ugh, and they sort of reveal their hand, which was they didn't have anything but they wanted to make them think they did.

RK: Ah, ha.

TB: Then they've emboldened the real guy. That's the risk, that's the risk.

RK: Well, I could see where he'd want to kick back if he had that...especially if the guy came right out and told everything he thought the police knew about him. I mean, that was...I think I sent you that article.

TB: Yeah, and it ...

RK: But it wasn't the one... there's another one too where it was probably even more detailed about what was done. That was the initial shocker, that one. The next few that came out revealed more and more information about the interview process.

TB: Yeah. So he... if the guy ever gets picked up and brought I for interrogation he's in all likelihood going to be ready for it, probably gone over it a thousand times in his mind. So see, you're going to have to come up with a different vehicle. And again ... it's....

RK: When you were talking about how serial killers would talk, is getting caught with the goods an overwhelming thing?

TB: That's a good point. I mean, is... From the standpoint of playing the standard game, playing by the rules of the criminal justice system where you just proclaim your innocence and let your public defender do the talking, if you're caught with the goods it's really kind of reached...you're gone beyond the point of deniability, whether it be in a legal sense or in a psychological sense. And I think certainly, if a guy were caught with the body of woman in his trunk, even 8 years, 6 years later, I think he might be more vulnerable ... you might say...to just saying listen, why, we found your....there's no pint in denying it, what happened? And start with that and I think that certainly if that were the case he'd be more likely to tell something about everything, than if he were just arrested in his house and taken downtown. Because at that point, based upon everything that's come out so far it's clear the police, it would be at least I would say, that the ...that the police have next to nothing that's of real value. They've got a lot of stuff. A few profiles and some descriptions of vehicles, but in terms of hard evidence, if I were the perpetrator I would feel pretty confident. Although, still, being arrested, if it's the first time he's ever been arrested... If he's never...that's another factor. If he...and I would...one of the first things I would do, and I'm

sure the first thing you or the Task Force people would do if I had a guy that I wanted, had a warrant issued for to arrest him in this case, find out if he had any kind of criminal background. And I'm not talking just from the standpoint of trying to figure out if he's done anything like that in the past, but trying to find out how familiar he is with the system. Has he been hardened? Does he know what his rights are? I mean, not to say that you'd violate his rights, but has he been through the system before so he is conditioned to how the game is played? Does he know how to be, how it is to be interrogated? How it is to go to trial? Does he know what prison is like and jail is like? Is he familiar with all that? A lot of people, the Green River Killer if he's never been arrested and gone through the system like that before, gone to jail and gone to prison, even though he's pretty solid in terms of not talking about what he's done, the prospect of jail and prison could still be very frightening to him because he simply has never experienced it before. Anybody who's spent any time in prison however would not be as intimidated by the threat of prison or anything, you know, a dark jail and...so the less experienced he is with the criminal justice system, obviously the better off you'll be...I mean, in terms of, the better off you'd be in terms of questioning.

RK: That may be a factor in conjunction with the time span that expires from the murder to the arrest. You were talking about earlier.

TB: Yeah.

RK: The shorter the series, the more likely he is to talk about it.

TB: That's my feeling and that's I'm very strong feeling along those lines. Early on, the guy's more vulnerable and all the experience of going out and abducting and killing someone is obviously a very terrible thing, but in terms of how the perpetrator sees it, it's certainly traumatic, can be very traumatic, too. If for no other reason that his very life, his freedom, his way of living is, his own identity is threatened by possible discovery. So, early on the guy could be

unstable. He hasn't figured it out. He hasn't, psychologically, he hasn't adapted to it. He hasn't adjusted to it ...doesn't know how to deal with the membranes of the system. And the more chance he has to rationalize it and justify it and work it out in his own mind and more or less come to terms with it, and carry these very dark secrets, and the longer he carries them, the more he gets used to them, the more difficult it is, will be to get him to talk.

RK: How about some of the people you've talked to though, that have talked sporadically about what they've done? Is that the same type as somebody that, I mean, they obviously haven't talked to anybody else, but they've talked to you because you understand what their, you know, at least they sense you understand their feelings.

TB: I've had a couple of guys approach me because they write a lot about me and more or less when it got off on sharing the details of their adventures, their crimes with me. So, and I've also approached guys who haven't come to me first just because I was curious about what they had been accused and/or convicted of. So I would go to them. And of course I would do so very, very discreetly, making sure they understand that I didn't want to know any details. And that may be something that may be a technique that you could use. I don't want to know the details. I don't want to know names or places. That's what I would do. I said, "Don't tell me. I don't want to know dates, I don't want to know names, I don't know specific places."

RK: Could they even remember that stuff?

TB: That's a good question. Ummm...the guys I've talked to... my feeling is that they remember. Now, whether or not they are going to tell me exactly what happened for whatever reason is another question. But I don't know of, I don't know of any... I haven't certainly haven't encountered enough guys to run across let's say a split-personality type, you know, like allegedly Bianchi is. I haven't run across anybody who's got that kind of dual personality or anything

and I don't run across anybody who professes to have had amnesia or blackouts or anything like that. I think I've run across guys whose memories may be justifiably vague for reasons such as they were under the influence of alcohol or drugs or just the rather...I think the ... the fear...the panic, the fright, the cause of that violence that went on there would somehow cloud their memories. But basically, I think the guys I've talked to can remember when they talk to me. And again, I've had the luxury of when I talk to any of these men of having lived with them. So, I see their normal side, their everyday side. You know, the guys that watch "Let's make a Deal" and how they root for the ... how they root for the guy, I mean, how they....the game shows they watch and the canteen items they buy everyday side and yet I know that....this other part of them too. And it's a great advantage in not being law enforcement and not being a psychologist and being viewed as who I am when I talk to them. It's...on occasion I think it gives me insight into some of it, three or four of these guys have been accused of serial murder. And I think they remember. I know they remember.

RK: When you speak of not knowing, not wanting to know names and dates and places and stuff, how do you verify what they're telling you is the truth?

TB: That's a good question. I....it's hard to put into words. It's just knowing when they tell you something, I mean when they describe how something happened whether it's authentic or not. And let's face it, the ... you know, after killing someone is....is...what one experiences is not a common experience. You know, you can read all the murder mysteries you want and you know that as graphic as some of these detective novels may try to be, you just know they're not for real because you can tell the guy's never been there. He's just making it up. Whether you watch some of these so-called slasher films or whatever. I mean, you know that's just Hollywood. This doesn't really happen that way. You just know. I mean, how do you...you say you just know that...And so if a guy's making it up or if he's read about it, I just have a sense that he's not being straight with me. You can tell it. Certainly one way that, one of several ways is that...it's a tried and true way...is he doesn't tell the same story the same way twice. And I always make them tell it to me two or three times. And I'll say, "hey, how about this?" That doesn't make sense.

RK: It would seem to me that the strategy that you're using is totally opposite of the interests of the police because they want to know times and dates and places, accountability. Maybe, maybe not so much in the framework of getting the goods on anybody as much as accounting for, you know, that's the only way they've recorded their facts.

TB: Well, this is true. And yet that's a way of opening somebody up. If a guy feels...if a guy has, for whatever reason, insulated himself from the reality of what he did, but can discuss it in the third person or better yet, in the first person without getting specific, you're getting... gradually getting closer to the truth. I mean, the whole truth and nothing but the truth, including the names and dates and places...what I mean, everything he knows. But maybe the more circuitous route in some cases may be the better route because it...some guys just can't get the can't give it to you right straight. They can't sit down and say, "ok, on this night this is what I did and this is what happened and so on and so forth." They might be better to work them into it gradually to the point where they say, well...you know, sort of opening themselves up by degrees. Certainly you want to verify what they say ultimately. You want to verify it by making sure they tell it to you the same way and maybe even putting on sodium pentothal or on a polygraph, just to make absolutely sure. Let's say...in a big case like the Green River case you're obviously not going to believe anybody who comes forward and starts confessing these crimes. Even if they get some of the names, dates and places right because so much of information has been disseminated to the public. And I'm sure you've sat down and tried to figure out how would...I mean, there are things you about that have not been made public. But more than that...this guy's memory might be so bad after all these years he might not be able to remember some of these details that you know about the public doesn't know about.

RK: That's right.

TB: That's another problem. Even if he wants to confess, he might not remember

enough to satisfy you. Maybe the only way to do it is would be like say through a polygraph or sodium pentothal or something in a very careful debriefing technique. One of the things that I've found just really appalling about how they handled this fellow that I told you about who started, who was for seven years out there doing this, started with a double murder, according to his own admission. And, and confessed, allegedly confessed to some two dozen or so murders over that period of time. Was it...what bothered me was it was so sloppy and so haphazard and they did the same thing to this guy they did to [another killer]. You had one detective sergeant and this, and this county police or sheriff's department who was more or less the head honcho and he was the guy that all these other agencies in Florida had to go through to get to this fellow. And they would come through and plop their files down on the desk and he'd look through them and they'd talk it over and he confessed to a lot of this stuff. And a lot of the stuff...he...and he was doing it because he likes to be viewed as this...[the killer] likes to be viewed as a good guy. He liked the affirmation, "you're doing the right thing." And, he liked the special treatment he was getting in jail. He was getting off on all that. But they weren't carefully screening his confessions and verifying them and making sure he was telling them the same thing, you know day after day. And they didn't bring in any specialists, any psychologists or psychiatrists. They didn't use the behavioral science people of the FBI. And so [the killer] was...this guy's just getting away with all kinds of stuff.

RK: What does he think of [that detective]? This guy that interviewed him...

TB: Well, I don't know what he thinks of him right now. I last was with [the killer]...we were both on death watch, as a matter of fact, together and we've also lived in the same wing together for some time. And I read that...a very confidential report prepared by the ...it's a presentence report by some state agency which goes into great detail about his confessions and his past life. And well, [the killer] is a long subject... But [the killer] liked the detective. I got the impression at least initially that he liked and trusted him. But my impression was that the authorities, I think down in Daytona, wherever, got ...finally got tired of [the killer] confessing and getting life sentences. He first confessed when he was arrested in February of 1980. When he was arrested, the day they arrested him

for assault on a prostitute and I think he is a case you might want to study from the standpoint of what you might be looking at with the Green River killer. Because he was out there for seven years, by his own admission. [They are interrupted in the conversation by the sounds of altercation]

RK: I'm glad we left that room. It might have been in there.

TB: No ... it's right outside the door here.

RK: Oh, is it? Two inmates?

TB: Yes, I'm almost certain, but I don't know. Look at them. They work in here and they still have to... they messed somebody up. Oh, well. Well, [the killer] would be a case study that maybe you'd want to look at because over the years he did prey on a lot of prostitutes and he was out there for so long...seven years doing that...doing his thing. At least seven years. And so when he was arrested for attempted murder, he attempted to stab a prostitute that was in a motel room. My understanding is that, well, and the record shows, that the day he was arrested he not only admitted to attacking this prostitute, who lived, who would have died. He was trying to kill her but she got away. But he confessed to another murder...two other murders that day. And that was all he admitted to. In fact, they didn't press him any further. And this went on...and so he came to prison here and he was here for a little over a year and for reasons which [he]has never satisfactorily explained to me, he got in touch with that detective and said he wanted to talk some more about this. And began to, admitted to a few more ...and then, maybe half a dozen more. And then he came back a year and a half later in 1983, and confessed to a whole bunch more murders in September and October of '83. And they finally decided to give him the death sentence for some of those confessions. And he wasn't finished yet. I mean, it was just as plain as the nose on your face that he was having a lot of time opening up. And he was doing so a little bit at a time. And perhaps it was maddening that...to the prosecutors involved that he was dragging this out. Maybe they got impatient

with him, but they ended up giving him a death sentence, three death sentences based upon his confession in '83. And he stopped talking to them after that. And he won't talk to them anymore. They scared him. They managed to set him up. But he was badly mishandled. If he was properly handled back in '80 when he confessed to those two murders, if they'd known how to follow up on what he'd said and develop and inquire into his activities over the years, they'd have probably gotten more, gotten more out of him then. Instead of waiting for the next two and a half years for him to keep coming back to them. Yeah.

RK: Did he ever talk to you about during that seven or eight year span of how close he came to being apprehended at any time?

TB: Well, yeah, as a matter of fact. He was...yeah. Let's see, what happened? He was primarily preying on prostitutes and again, this is, in many ways [the killer] is a classic situation. And it's been a long time since I've reviewed this in my memory of everything he told me and certainly since I've read his presentence report. But I think it was in 19...late 1970s, 1977, 1978. He was arrested by vice, by a woman police officer. [He] was out looking for a prostitute to kill. This was in '77, three years before he was caught, three or four years. I think he was caught in '80. Yeah, he was caught in '80. And he was arrested for soliciting. What do they call that? Whatever the appropriate charge is...

RK: Ah, ha.

TB: And significantly enough, he was arrested in Daytona and he was bonded and all that stuff. I mean, he was put in jail and he got out and I think he got some sort of fine, probation. But the next week, instead of going back and looking for somebody else on the ...let's see...on the east coast of Florida, the record will show and [his] confessions will substantiate the fact that he drove all the way across to the other side of the state, Tampa, and...well he drove first to Orlando and then to Tampa, in succeeding weeks, after his arrest in Daytona, looking for victims and finding you know victims. So, it's logical, and in fact it

did happen that when he was arrested in Daytona where he'd been doing most of his hunting for...on that prostitution charge, that shortly thereafter he just drove to another part of the state to do the same thing.

RK: And admitted that.

TB: Oh, that's the close as he ...that I know of that he came to being caught. And again, only part of the story is known of him. And he...as often as I try to get him to open up to me, he wouldn't. He would always try to bullshit me. And the thing that bothered him no end was that I had this extremely detailed report that someone else had given me. See, he had allegedly confessed to a murder that somebody else on death row is convicted of committing. And so that person managed to get a hold of this report on him. And so I had this report. And he was a...is a pathological liar. And one of the sweetest, nicest, most generous guys you'll ever run across. You put him in a three-piece suit and he'd look like an economist. Like a frumpy haired, college economist. And one of the most harmless, nice, happy-going, good-old-uncle guys you'd ever want to run across. And so, it ... getting to know him was fascinating. 'Cause he'd tell me stories about things that happened and then I'd read that something else had happened, in the police report.

RI: I've met that detective at a seminar a while back. You know, he said, "gee, I don't know why I'm up here talking. You should be up here telling your story." And he said, "Look at me." And you know, it took me a while to figure out what he was talking about. And he was devastated. I mean, he's... there's whatever he'd done in that case, instead of, you know, learning from it and being able to profit by it, that experience, for some reason, it was looked down upon by his own people.

TB: Well, it was a mess. Well, I don't know...there may be, you may be, it may have been subjected to all kinds of pressures. I'm sure. But, the way [this killer] was handled was, it was just a mess. They didn't call up, to my knowledge...

they didn't call anybody who really know what they were doing. And they were just taking him haphazard and piece-meal and running around the state and showing him all kinds of stuff. And so thoroughly distorted and contaminated everything Jerry said, and that, it's hard to say what he's responsible for now. And then end up giving...I mean, after being patient with him, while across the course of two and a half years, they finally, the prosecuting authorities just got fed up with him instead of giving him those life sentences. They gave him three death sentences and he just stopped talking. And he wasn't finished talking, believe me. I mean, he wasn't finished giving them, telling them all he knew, by a long shot. They just had not thoroughly been able to sit him down and figure out how do we get this guy to tell us all he knows and make sure he's telling us the truth. I mean, there are still a lot of question marks in my mind. But, I've always felt this. If he was telling the truth about the early murders that occurred in '73, if in fact, and there's a lot more probably that he's involved with, if he was telling the truth when he said he killed those two girls, two hitchhikers in '73, then, I know for a fact that he did a lot more than he's talking about. Because there are huge gaps of twelve months where there's nothing there. I mean, he's told the police...and I can just look at his patterns and tell, you know, knowing what I know about him and looking at his crime patterns, I mean, sometimes three or four a month...and then there's periods of twelve, eighteen months in that seven year period where there's just nothing. Big blanks.

RK: Really. Nothing uh?

TB: Nothing. Nothing he's told the police. Nothing that police got around to asking him about. I mean...

RK: Is that because he wasn't doing anything or out of town?

TB: No, hell, no. These were periods of time when...see he's...I'm not trying to psycho-analyze him but I know him to the extent to know that he's got a poor self-image. He covers it over with a lot of joviality, but he has a poor self-image

that was aggravated by alcohol abuse. He could never finish school. He couldn't hold a job. During that whole seven year period he lived in his ... in his parents' home or in homes owned by his parents or for a short time with his wife in a trailer. He never held anything more than part-time menial jobs, drinking heavily, driving around, getting money from his parents. And in the period following the separation from his wife, where he lost his job with his father-in-law, and had to live in his parents' home, was kicked out of his own trailer by this woman he was married to, a period of time when I know damn well he was angry and hostile and probably was feeling as bad about himself as he had ever felt, and had more time on his hands than he'd probably had for years, there's nothing there for twelve months.

RK: A huge gap by the police.

TB: I know damn well that he was out there doing stuff. It was absolutely, there's just no question. If...and there's a big "if" there..some of the other things he's told the police are true about what happened in '73, and '74. If that's true, and it seems to be true, then there's a lot more and they just didn't know how to get it out of him. And it's a shame now because he's been polarized and the rare opportunity to really find out what was going on in his mind or what he really knows may have passed. The only disturbing thing I find out...I find about his revelations to the police, is I don't know that he ever turned up any bodies, any remains. And that's ... that doesn't necessarily say he's not telling the truth, but I mean, I don't know. I don't know how much more he has.

RK: I heard a figure one time where he'd confessed to 41 murders.

TB: Yeah, but in fact...the presentence report which is very detailed and goes into great length about his confessions, shows that he confessed to 11 murders where he's been charged and given a sentence of some sort, whether death sentence or life sentence. And ten more murders where they haven't yet, where they just never got around to charging him for one reason or another. That's 21.

Now there may be others they suspect him of...or whatever...but that's...the report's fairly comprehensive and it pinpoints 21 specific cases. And I've charted them out, integrated them with what he's told me, with what I know, and what the presentence report says, and there are huge, these enormous gaps at very critical times when he was clearly in a state of mind, based upon my knowledge of how these, how these things go, where he would....more likely drink and that kind of behavior than...you know. Now I think that's the problem that investigators face even when they get somebody that they think has been involved in a series...is...just finding this out, settling for the easy conviction of two and locking the guy away. I mean, how much more, I mean, I think they just, for whatever reason the prosecuting attorneys have reached the point where, reached its threshold where they weren't willing to wait anymore to find out. It was more important to them to give him a death sentence than it was for them to find out what he really knew. I think they just reached that point where they said, "We've had enough of this fellow. We can't give him anymore life sentences. We've got to...that's it." And despite the fact that these glaring inadequacies in how he was interrogated, and these big gaps, these unexplainable gaps in his stories. And I say that not to condemn [the killer], and I certainly wouldn't reveal anything specific that he told me, yet I think it stands, it's always just appalled me just how badly that specific case was handled. I mean, how badly he was handled. It would be a good case study for anyone wanting to know how not to approach somebody accused of a series of crimes, is, would be to study his case. Cause he was lost. I mean, either they're going to kill him and undoubtedly will. I don't know who that's going to end up there...But...

RK: So you haven't seen him in a while then?

TB: No I haven't. I saw him today walking down the hall, but I haven't lived around him where we could go to the yard and talk in confidence. We've sent each other notes or whatever. I haven't talked to him for over a year, well ...year and a half.

RK: I was...I'm kind of getting the feeling that whatever the efforts of the

police, if a certain time span has gone by and a person has learned to deal with their own thoughts and problems for quite a while, the efforts to somehow understand or reveal the story in somebody in the interview process would almost totally be controlled by the person that's being interviewed. Whatever the police do, or say, or their presence really doesn't make any difference.

TB: Yeah. If he wants to tell you he'll tell you and if he doesn't he won't.

RK: Yeah.

TB: I mean, we're talking, again, about somebody who has been out there for years and years at this. I mean, he's had this, he's integrated this so thoroughly into his consciousness, into his daily life, into his way of being and living and has become so familiar with how to deal with what people commonly refer to as guilt, remorse, or whatever. Deal with it and/or do away with it. And, it's become a ... these thoughts and memories that constitute, that are related to these crimes have been, he's adapted so well to them and kept them so close because he knows the consequences of giving them up. That .. that it's not likely anybody is going to trick him into talking about it or pressure him into talking about it.

RK: What, what is, are the consequences anything that can be visualized? Or conceptualized in some way in the part of an unknown party?

TB: Well...I...you mean someone like an investigator who's interviewing the guy?

RK: Yeah. How does he conceptualize what's been integrated into this guy's

mind for so long?

TB: Well, well, I think....

RK: Time? Patience?

TB: Yeah. Time and patience. I think those are two good words. You can't hope to drag it out of a guy overnight. Ok? And you can't get frustrated if he doesn't give it to you all at once, in one piece. Because there are, you have to be content with slowly learning about what kind of person is this. What demands do we, is he responding to within himself? And they may be very particular, very subtle, and very difficult to find out. Like for instance, this fellow I was telling you about who would tell you at the drop of a hat about all the people he killed, except he just couldn't bring himself to tell anybody how he killed his girlfriend and where he put her body. He just couldn't because his view of the world was these other killings were good, but killing somebody you know is bad. And he was afraid if he told about...if he admitted to killing his girlfriend and told them where the body was, then people would see him as a bad person. That's pretty bizarre but that's how he was thinking. And it didn't occur to me until after we talked about it for a while. And so, I think the more you take time to know somebody, all of the information you could beforehand, before he was brought in, know as much about him as possible before he was brought in, and then maybe even to talk to friends and relatives about him once he's in. Now of course, once he's in custody, he's in custody. But you get a feeling for the guy as much as you can without talking to the guy. And then once you start talking to him you just use your own gut reaction. Just to start, patiently probing without pushing, without being judgmental, taking it a step at a time, the third person, maybe doing it without dates and places or, making it an abstract kind of thing. I mean, I'm not...it's a ... when I'm faced...when I'm faced with somebody and I want to learn about the case, certainly what I want to learn, my perspective, is different from yours. But still I have to respond to what that guy gives me. And I often know less than you would probably know about someone. My advantage is we know he's been convicted of some kind of murder, anyway. So, that's

certainly the starting point. And he trusts me to one degree or another. Still, if you can...if an investigator can somehow inspire trust and confidence and come off as being nonjudgmental and be patient and probe and get to know how this guy's mind works...I know this is pretty general kinds of things, but...that's how I'd approach somebody who'd been out there for a number of years or involved in serial murder for a number of years. Somebody who'd only been at it for a short time would be more ridden, more susceptible to coercion you know. Remember that classic case, you've probably run across it, where they bring this guy into an interrogation room and ask if he wants to take a polygraph and tell him to put his hand on this mat or something like this. And every time he gives an answer to a question, the investigator presses a button and a light goes on and said, augh, you're lying. And thoroughly convinced this guy that they knew he was lying about these key questions and he finally confessed. Of course, it wasn't hooked up to a polygraph at all. But that kind of ploy, as crude as it was, will work. Once in a while it will probably work on those guys who haven't been at it very long, haven't been through the system, Criminal Justice system. Haven't been imprisoned or jailed. And the whole thing about being in police custody is terrifying for you. And everything, their whole identity, everything they know about themselves, is of them being that they've always been taught, probably to cooperate with the police, even when it comes to confession some pretty horrible things.

RK: How would you approach a known offender that you know is in jail for murder on cases that you have technically unsolved? How would you approach an offender like that? I mean, they obviously know the system. They've been tried and convicted. Maybe sentenced to death. Then all of a sudden there are some unresolved matters of the past where this person is a suspect in those matters. How would you approach someone like that?

TB: [long silence] Well, I don't...again .. each case is going to be different. I think generally you've got to, it depends...it's just an entirely different set of circumstances that you, than you're going to have with somebody who's never been through the system, who's not convicted. And I guess that you'd have to be able to give him something. If...I don't know. Let's say that you had the Green River guy was locked up here. You had somebody locked up you thought as the

Green River guy. May have been locked up for assault or something and he's in Walla Walla. I mean...what could you...how would you go to him? I mean, how could you approach such a person who's familiar with the system who's locked up for ten or twenty years to confess to something which obviously carried some pretty heavy penalties and resulted in being a very notorious guy in prison. And....

RK: Maybe it wouldn't result in any heavy penalties.

TB: Well. It would...

RK: I mean, he may be under the death sentence, you know, for crimes he committed now, but what happened in the past there's no death sentence for. I mean, the penalty is not as great for those.

TB: Umm...

RK: Seems like a pretty impossible situation that where there's still answers to questions that could be resolved and you...you've talked a lot about the how and how you've approached these people and the development of an appreciation of what was done. And I would expect that a detective in that situation would have to be the same, absolutely in the same criteria to develop some sort of appreciation for what somebody has done and understanding. Now we could end up just by a walk-in to a guy that's been under death sentence for a while in Walla Walla and we're faced with this situation. We have several crimes where the circumstantial evidence is pretty well focusing on one person, yet the opportunity to go interview them is not right, and virtually not knowing how to go operate that type of interview. And...

TB: Well, that's ... in that kind of circumstance, you see everything is complicated by the demands of the criminal justice system, of the way everyone is more or less required to play the game. And a guy who is on, who's in prison or whether he's on death row or wherever he is has got appeals and he would simply be foolish to talk to the police about anything as long as his appeals are intact. Because the system as it stands now is not really geared to getting at the truth so much as it is...it gets at portions of the truth. It gets at approximations of the truth. Whether it be a trial...and as long as a guy goes to trial all you're getting is what the witnesses say, you know. And that's only part of the story, probably. The same is true on appeal. You're just, the guy who's been convicted is bound to try to maintain his position and he must be, and he can't say anything, is not in a position to say anything.

RK: Would that type of person be inclined to speak in the abstract?

TB: I don't know. I don't know what that would serve. Remember you told me that, that didn't totally serve any purpose to the investigators as long as it was so vague that they couldn't really pinpoint anything.

RK: Yeah. And then there's two sides to that. Well, what would happen, would that be something that could be used against him?

TB: What...

RK: Any statements he makes. Is that something that can be used against him?

TB: Well, I don't know. It depends on how general they are. But I think you know the...you know, the old Miranda warning..."anything you say can and will

be held against you.” And I ...it doesn’t necessarily even have to mean in a court of law. But I don’t know. It’s hard to explain. The way things are set up, I don’t see how someone could say that, like you’re talking about Walla Walla, where they have any incentive to talk to you. I mean, first, on the one hand, he’s got his appeals and so there are disincentives, clearly disincentives to talking to you. On the other hand, what motivations would there be for someone in that position to talk to you about anything?

RK: How about someone like yourself that’s obviously astute and...there, and admitted by your own admissions several times that you really like talking to other people about this stuff. Is there something about that atmosphere that is...?

TB: Well, I...

RK: And you like reading everything you can get your hands on about the subject. You obviously like talking to me about it or otherwise you wouldn’t be doing it. Is there something about that atmosphere that is...?

TB: Well. With me, I do enjoy it. And, yet I ...that interest ebbs and flows. There’s some times I’m more interested in talking about it than others. Like right now, I’m sort of ambivalent about it. I mean, it’s interesting, I find it interesting. I know a lot about the subject. It’s hard to put it in words in the abstract. I mean, to me it’s more interesting to have specific things to deal with, you know, specific cases. It’s hard...I don’t like to generalize because like I say the guy who’s responsible for the Green River killings is not a profile ... he’s not a computer program. He’s a very unique human being. So I don’t like to generalize, but I do like to talk about it and I like to read about it. And yet, I can take it or leave it most of the time. I mean, it’s certainly not something that I ... you know ... that I would rather do than anything else. Like, right now, if I had a choice, I’d rather be outside running around in the sunshine. Sometimes I’m more motivated to talk about, read about this stuff, than others. But I don’t get off on it. I mean, that is, I don’t get thrill out of talking to you about it in the

abstract. I mean I'm not trying to, I won't try to make myself out to be a good guy, but I do have motivations of, and generally ...would genuinely would like to see this questionnaire for example of yours work. I mean and I genuinely would like to see...

RK: Question too, you know, well don't go out at night and lock your damn door and don't talk to anybody the rest of your life, you know, be a recluse. Anyway, here's this guy on television talking and then they have on two victim's mothers of [offender]. And then they bring on this asshole serial rapist that obviously shouldn't be out on the street, but he is, and guess who his backup therapist is to help understand this serial rapist on the Donahue show?

TB: [person].

RK: [another person].

TB: Oh, my god.

RK: And it was... I couldn't believe it. This guy was sitting there talking about well most of these people you know, they have problems in childhood. And the serial rapist turned and "you're darn right. Boy, I was sexually abused by my father." And then they talked about another thing. "You're darn right." And he just it was almost like they were in tandem. I couldn't believe that he'd put himself in a situation like that to almost condone this guy being on the street when it was obvious to most of the audience that they ought to cut his [manhood] off and throw it away forever. The guy just right out in front said you know that's what I always want to do is rape women.

TB: That's pretty unusual.

RK: It is.

TB: I mean he would have the nerve to go on national TV and put the heat on himself.

RK: Oh yeah. He was out on parole.

TB: Yeah.

RK: California.

TB: Yeah. Well, that whole scene. You know...you've read it so much. There's so much. I don't know that serial gets as much ink these days as it did for a few years and years back. In the recent past, I don't know, there's so much misleading information on it ...about it. And it is begging the issue to talk about unhappy childhoods and all. And I'm not into that. But I think it's important to try to understand it if for no other reason than the better you understand it, the better you're going to, prevent it or help you apprehend the people that need to apprehend... I mean to the extent maybe it's important to know some of these things.

RK: Of course, look at your own theory to that though...the criminal justice system. We have no way to study serial killers. We sentence them to death. We kill them. We give them a choice of life without parole in some instances or

staying in prison forever. There is no, there's no vehicle in which to study those people under cooperative circumstances. I mean, even a guy like [serial killer]. I've seen him on television three or four times, talking to news people. I know that behavioral sciences people have talked to him at great lengths.

TB: He's a pretty articulate guy.

RK: He is. He's very smart. He's also a goddamn liar. Yet, nobody has gotten in a situation to say close the door, even though he's 6'9" and 300 pounds and say, "Hey, son of a bitch, it's time for you to talk right and straight now." You know. "The game's over with."

TB: That's what I'm saying. You can listen to him. I haven't heard him. But I'm just saying. I know what you're talking about. And here's a guy who knows what happened in his own circumstances and yet he's going to try to bullshit people. And you can see that in him and I could probably see that in him and I could probably see that in him. And how do you sit down and really get down ...to get the straight facts, the real truth out of folks who had that information and they can give it up? Oh, by the way, he did, however, I mean, I did read somewhere where he at least in my mind summarized that the ...what? The savage irrationality of serial murder in a sentence, he said, "it's like this." He says, "I used to see a good looking girl and one minute I'd be thinking how nice it would be to go out with her and then the next instant I was thinking how nice her head would look on a stick." You know, I mean, that it's a horrible thing and yet it indicates the kind of, the schism between ...that exists in those kinds of individuals between their "normal selves" and that other part of themselves that is so destructive.

RK: Well, one of the things he did was on the ...he was interviewed on this HBO serial murder thing. And he said that on one occasion he picked up two girls. The second girl he picked up was convinced that the situation was ok because there was another female in the car with her. So she gets in. Now, he says that

there's a lot of previous talk and if they would have said something to him like "we understand the way you are and that we're here to help you and do anything that you want, I wouldn't have got to kill those girls." Well, what he really did was the minute the two got in the back seat in the car, right there in the street... he's already said this in another statement now, turns right around boom... boom ...both of them. Now, now he's getting on television. He's changing the goddamn story around because they weren't understanding ... trying to make it look like he's theif somebody would just understand me I wouldn't have had to do all this.

TB: Let's try to rationalize his conduct. And that's the curious thing that you see happening, not just press and serial murders, but maybe everyone does that. We all, people, normal or abnormal I think. Look how sometimes you'll see somebody trying to rationalize something that happened in their past and make it look a little bit better. He's just trying to deal with, I think, the needs he has inside to look at other people, maybe. Maybe there's something else happening there. But...what I was thinking though, when I suggested to the FBI, and the rest when here, and I suggest to you, is that... and it has fantastic potential and perhaps for that...and unfortunately will never, but if you can gather together five or ten fairly articulate guys who have been incarcerated and believed to be serial murders and get them into a group setting, they have a forensic facility up at behavior science center, behavioral science unit up at Quantico. Under some kind of control, very secure situation, and get into a group interaction like they have in the sexual offender program. Get somebody who's very skilled at managing a group situation and I think you could really ... you'd have the various participants cutting through each other's bullshit. And brainstorming and otherwise talking about and going over each other's cases and getting down to really the heart of the matter in a way that I don't imagine anybody could ever do. And a group, say what you want about group therapy, it can be that kind of group, interaction can be very effective for ...by using people to reveal someone's deceptiveness...People who have similar experiences. They use it in, for instance, a variety of therapeutic settings, but they use it for, very effectively, for people that have been accused of various sex crimes and sexual offenders. And something like that I think would be very productive. Very effective. Of course, I don't imagine anybody would be willing to stick their neck out to do it either. [An FBI profiler] said that he'd like to try something along those lines if they could develop a ...build a forensic facility up there. But I think that could

be very productive. And it'd be interesting to be able to see it from somebody else's point of view and interact with people who have had similar experiences. And share that kind of information in ways that they could never do it on their own, one on one with an investigator or a psychiatrist or anyone who really had seen or experienced that kind of thing themselves.

RK: Ah ha. Is that, that would have to be done with probably people that have at least, in fact most of their cases resolved...

TB: Yeah, you're right. Somebody who is in a situation where they could feel free to open up and talk. Like [the serial killer], or yeah. Somebody that's at least willing to talk about their cases, and would not be jeopardizing themselves if they were candid about what is happening.

RK: yeah.

TB: And there are a number around the country. I think you'd be surprised if you sat down and tracked down people who were, who are incarcerated for what amounts to serial crimes, serial murders, who don't have death sentences or you know don't have the death sentence.

RK: What happened to...last time I was here you mentioned [another killer]. Is he here?

TB: Yeah, he's still here. But I just saw him walking down the hall earlier today. What time is it by the way?

RK: 4:35. What time do they close you out?

TB: 5:00.

RK: 5:00?

TB: Well, probably quarter to 5:00.

RK: Really?

TB: Yeah.

RK: ok.

TB: Augh, yeah I just saw him. He lived in the same wing that I did until they moved him out. He was living in the same wing I did and I live...He's all of them are on death row. He's ...his death sentence was overturned.

RK: Umm...

TB: So he's just somewhere. He's not....I don't think there's anything happening there. I think it's been pretty conclusively demonstrated that he and his partner were not what they....at least believed that, it's not...they're not...people

believed them to be early on anyway. I don't know.

RK: Yeah, they threw [another killer's] latest case in El Paso out of court. They didn't have anything. There is so much phonyism behind the police efforts to attach [this killer] to their cases.

TB: Ah, ha. Once that ball gets rolling you seen it, they would thoroughly discredit...back in '84, '84 and '85 an investigative piece came out in the Dallas paper I think. To begin with it showed pretty conclusively that they weren't who they said they were.

RK: Yeah.

TB: And still though the myth persists once it gets lodged in the consciousness of the media. They continue to list this killer as this prolific serial murderer when in all likelihood if he did whatever he did he's not what he...he's not what he said he did. Once the media pegs you and gets your name on their list of infamous characters, you're there. It's like every article that comes out, I would imagine, on the subject of serial murder now has the name Ted Bundy in it more often than not.

RK: I don't think I've ever seen one that hasn't had it.

TB: Yeah. And yet nobody knows. It's ...the references are based upon bad information generally speaking.

RK: Oh, yeah.

TB: So...

RK: Oh yeah.

TB: You know, I haven't given up. I think the FBI though, of all the stuff I've run across, and I may be giving them too much credit, I don't see them as, the FBI as a super law enforcement people. I know they're just human like everybody else. But I do think some of the stuff I see coming out of the behavioral science unit, especially some of the things that I saw printed with respect to their studies, is the best I've read. And I'm sure there are people that know as much as the folks up there, maybe more. But of all the literature I've read, I think, at least in my opinion, they've managed to capture as best as it can be captured, the character of the serial murderer, generally speaking if there is such a thing. Pretty good stuff I thought. Pretty, too general for me, I think to be of any value to you or anyone else out there. They should publish something a bit more specific.

RK: Have you ever thought of writing a definition of serial murder yourself?

TB: I don't know that...I don't know there's a definition that would fit. Certainly no definition I would know fit everybody. And...

RK: You would have to be rather general in your...

TB: Yeah. It would be on...it would be on...

RK: I'll send you a definition that the MAIT people came up with. See what you think of that. It's kind of general.

TB: Well...

RK: It's hard ...it's hard to use the term. You know, like if you're going to have homicide classifications, mass and serial.

TB: Yeah.

RK: How do you define serial? I mean these others are rather simple to define.

TB: Well, how do you tell...

RK: Do you define it by classification or do you define it by motivation?

TB: Ah, ha.

RK: Is homicide classification motivation?

TB: Well, you have rape here too.

RK: Ah ha.

TB: I mean, you, it could be a serial rapist.

RK: Ah, ha.

TB: Or torture of some sort.

RK: Well, we've got, if more than one, rare in order of most important.

TB: Oh, I see. I see. Well, yeah. The whole nature of the intellectual behavioral emotional process involved in any kind of homicide that, particularly serial murder, I think is just...it's made to be something other than what it really is. I think it's made to be more mysterious and more malignant a process than it really is. Serial murder is another form of behavior. I mean, it's another form of behavior. And yet it utilizes That behavior is, was spawned and developed and used as the same neurological circuit as any other behavior. I believe. I'm not trying to trivialize it, but I do think people need to see it in the context of what it really is. And there are all sorts of abhorrent behaviors out there. Well, all sorts of normal behaviors. And they all, and cruel and terrible as serial murder is, it is another form, it is acquired just like any other behavior is acquired. Now, I'm not trying to reduce this just to behavioral as terms, but that's one way of explaining it. It certainly is maintained by a mental component, as it were. It has its origin. But nevertheless, I ...so, if I were to define the whole nature of serial murder, I'd try to bring in those kind of aspects to say that do you want to understand what goes on in the mind of somebody who commits this kind, the

kind of behavior we call serial murder. Then, first of all, look at yourself. Look at anything you've done repeatedly over the years that has not been good for you or somebody else. Drinking, smoking, shoplifting, stealing flowers, taking too many newspapers from the newspaper stand. Again, not trying to trivialize, but trying to personalize it. Because it's unique. But every behavior is unique. So much can be said. I mean, you can't...I can't...certainly wouldn't attempt to describe it here in a few words, because it can't be described in a few words. And every case is different. I'd hoped that we'd talk a little bit more or just kind of talk a little bit more about Green River, but we did talk some about it. I wanted to talk some about what you mentioned in your letter about maybe some things that could be done to seduce the guy...

RK: Yeah.

TB: To talk. As long a shot as that might be, I'll write to you about it.

RK: Okay.

TB: Yeah. Well, the guy has gone this long. Who knows what the reasoning is. You can speculate all day, you know, about where he is or what he's doing.

RK: Yeah. Well, some of the interesting things that have happened with the recent cases, we've had three ladies – two of which are prostitutes – one's a kind of street-type person, murdered. And one of them missing from 216 and the Highway and she's found on 180...well, let's see. Right off I-5 near 188th and the Freeway. And right in the ditch, right in the open. The prostitute is nude, yes. Strangled, yes. But you know a great length of time after. Then, they've had another one that was dumped out in the Timberlane area within say three miles of Timberlane out there near Four Corners where Maple Valley Highway meets the Kent Kangley Road. But they know where she's missing from. She is a

resident of Timberlane. But when they've traced her last steps up to again 216th and the Highway, even though she's a resident of Timberlane out thereand those two are unsolved cases, not, there's no other bodies around. There's no other activity before or after those two. It's just isolated incidents. Of course, they may have not have found a lot too. I mean, I've got this sinking feeling that that son-of-a-bitch has been there all along and the missing person population just hasn't been able to identify, you know, the people and he's just doing a better job of taking care of them.

TB: yeah, well, that's the feeling I got, from what I saw happening four years ago. Three, four years ago. But the chances are pretty high this isn't the same guy. Let's face it. As we've talked before about this, there's probably a number of active serial killers in the Pacific Northwest at any given time. Who knows whether it's five or ten or twenty. So you're bound to have this confounding your analysis of both the cases in '83 and '84. There may be some strays in there too, as well as what's happening now. And unfortunately this happens and prostitutes are an easy target. The fact that the one, one was found in the ditch is ...would have to be rather significantly departing from his former modus operandi, to be dumping them like that now. But anyway, it doesn't really make any difference however. The, it seems to me the first consideration is to catch him and then find out whether or not....if you catch the guy that did it, he either will be the guy or he won't be the guy. But in any case it's clear that that kind of thing is the kind of crime he's going to continue doing until he is caught.

RK: Well, I'm probably not going to get down here much before...

TB: At least they're fresh.

RK: Another...1984 to 1988. That's every four years. Maybe I can get down more often, but...get an excuse. In, let's see. Would it be next September I'm going to go to Atlanta so I might be able to work something out to sneak on down. And, you know. Strange as it is, I get invited everywhere in the United

States, this is the first time they invited me to Florida, to talk about computers. And how they are used in investigation and stuff. And I've been everywhere else but never been to Florida. And they seem to have more use for them anyway.

TB: Well, sure. Florida, California.

RK: They do.

TB: Have you noticed in the Do you keep close tabs on the ...on crime statistics and things, the stuff both in Washington State and nationally through the FBI I imagine you...have you noticed any kind of change in the incidents of what...of murders nationally and specifically have you noticed that there's been a decline in recent years in the incidents of serial murder or if there's a way of really testing it?

RK: My guess is that I have never seen so many serial murders in my life.

TB: As there have been recently?

RK: Yeah. The real problems with most of [interruption with knock on the door]. Yeah, sir.

Guard: Did you eat supper?

TB: No.

Guard: Ok.

RK: Want a tray?

TB: Yes, please.

RK: One of the things that I've noticed is that they have a lot more recognition, publicized recognition, of the cases. I mean, the minute two people are found dead together and missing at different times, the whole thing expands into a big serial case. Ok? Which helps to make the awareness part...it's there. I mean, you can look at the crime statistics. I think the actual statistics for murder probably have gone down. Not much, but percentage point. But there's no way of keeping status on serial cases. I don't think you can actually tell.

TB: I don't think you can, really.

RK: Yeah. You just really can't keep the statistics. But that's if you could figure out a way to do that, you could make a lot of money. Because everybody asks me all the time. "Is it raising? Is it falling? Is there more serial kills today than there was ten years ago?"

TB: Impossible to say.

RK: Yeah. My canned response most of the time is that it...there...we used to catch them a lot quicker. And maybe the availability of transportation and

population have changed to the extent that ...you know...metropolitan areas are just butted together from Vancouver to San Diego and the availability of people, the changes in the hitchhiking laws and the...and all the various factors that go in with making yourself a victim, availability of the victim, coupled with the fact that law enforcement agencies have become stronger and more stringent within their own jurisdictions.

TB: You'd think that would change if anything over the years to more cooperation rather than less cooperation because of what's happening.

RK: I had a robbery detective the other day tell me, cause we were talking about a similar system for robberies. And he says, "Shoot, we have the most robberies in the state and do not broadcast out to anyone else. One teletype on a robbery. Once in a while if they catch him in flight. But that's usually over their radio to King County Police, or over the phone, one's headed your way. But they don't ever....every agency around sends out a little teletype about a robbery they just had. Well, shoot, if Seattle Police is not cooperating in that respect, who is? You know, some little agencies, that's all they hinge on is the teletype. So, I can think of a lot of serial killers that I would classify as serial killers today. I didn't know about serial killers or whatever back a long time ago. But, we caught one back in the late 60's in Renton. Killed four kids. You know, he's a serial killer. It made a lot of headlines back then for maybe a year, but then everybody forgets about him.

TB: Yeah.

RK: You know.

TB: Yeah, publicity is crazy.

RK: And why? The guy's still alive. He's in Walla Walla. He's never going to get out. But he's there. And they always ask me, "Have you ever had a child killer in Seattle?" I'm going, "Oh, shit. Yeah." "Well, when?" "Well, 1968 for one." And then just on and on and on with all the other child killings we've had. But still, like a killer that I talked about. He's a serial killer. He had one murder and one attempted murder. But that guy is a serial killer. There's no question about it. He got caught quicker.

TB: He got caught before it could get going.

RK: Yeah.

TB: That's the...I'm sure you see a lot of those guys who start off and cause their earlier attempts are so unskilled or cause they're so inexperienced they foul up. But if they'd been allowed to go on you could see what they'd be doing.

RK: I think my next study is going to be a....once I get through with this one... which might take a couple of years....is an analysis of the difference. Take an arbitrary number of murders. Ok. You happen to have killed over twenty, or ten to twenty, and analyze the differences between how those people are caught, identified, you know, and how they did their victims, versus those that...you'd have to go with an arbitrary figure of two. That just two or three.

TB: Well, whatever. Three, four, five. I think you're still in the low area.

RK: Yeah. But I would really like to get to the types of guys who maybe have

done one rape and one murder.

TB: Ah, ha. I see.

RK: You know. For some reason, those folks have done some, something that's got themselves caught real quick. But in this study now, one of the things we're going to be looking at, once you've looked close enough...Now once you look at, and if you would, I don't know how you'd do it, if may be just number 21 on a page and then start writing about it or something. But, how many people have been convicted of murder and remurder? You know, they've gotten out. The old system and the old, there wasn't determinant sentencing back then...they're out on parole, they've done their time, or been pardoned or whatever the case might be. How many of those people have murdered in 1981 through 1986? You know, and I bet you we're going to find a few.

TB: Sure.

RK: I know we're going to find a few.

TB: Sure you are. Like that one....it's similar...not the same as, but like that case that I ...in Sacramento last year. I think I wrote to you about it. You probably already knew about it. The guy who'd been arrested because they'd found several prostitutes in his back yard or something.

RK: Oh, yeah.

TB: And then as it turns out, back in the late 70s he was tried and acquitted of a murder of a prostitute. So, during the past seven, eight years, he's just been out there. What's he been doing? You know.

RK: Ah, ha.

TB: He wasn't running a garden club.

RK: No.

TB: Well, not exactly.

RK: Yeah.

TB: So, you know, yeah, the guys that not only ...the ones who not only go in for murder, let's say in the 60s, and 70s, and came out again and murdered, the guys who....this is one you'll never be able to pin down, but it's always fascinated me, this.....the guy who's been, let's say, he's a serial killer and he gets popped for an abduction or kidnapping or burglary or something and gets put away for a few years, nobodyall they know is that he's a ...you know, he was a kidnapper. And he gets out again. And there are a lot of guys in prisons around the country like that.

RK: Yup. And I think that...you talk about reducing things in trivial terms, but if we can reduce the... forget about those people that killed a lot of people, but reduce it down to the ones that have done the kidnap or assault or the gal has

escaped from him or something and he gets caught, the serial murder framework is still there...Whatever is there ain't going to go away. I don't think it will.

TB: Well...that's ...without some kind of therapy which I'm not aware of.

RK: Yeah. The odds of this person being any better by the time he gets out of prison.

TB: Oh, out of prison. There's nothing that can be done for him in prison.

RK: No. No. Well, that's my focus is the ones in prison. Cause it looks to me like there's an awful lot of those people just waiting to kill.

TB: Yeah. This is true. Of course, you don't know until it's too late. There's so many aspects to it, you know. We haven't even You talk about the incidents of serial murder and whether it's going up or down, and yet, I mean, I read through the TV Guide and see some of the stuff on cable. You see some of the stuff in the video stores. And think of young people, young men, particularly boys being exposed to a lot of that. There's very harsh...some of the hard core stuff that they're exposed to today on cable TV or through the video stuff. And imagine the effect that is going to have on them in a society where there's an increasing instability because of one parent households and all this. And you wonder if there's a lot of boys and teenagers out there are just, you know, in the formative stages. Would be murderers, rapists, what have you...because of the bizarre kind of things they're exposed to as children. The young people. That's not to justify...but it's to say, my goodness, whether it be pornography or some of the violent stuff on TV, that's, I don't mean, I know that that is a powerful influence. It's not to deny that people have responsibility for what they do, but it's to say people, none of us are islands. We're all affected by our environments. And while not everybody who is exposed to violent pornography goes out and

rapes or kills, not everybody smokes cigarettes and gets cancer either....but we know it's bad for us. We know it does cause cancer in some people. Not everybody who is exposed to carcinogens gets cancer, but a lot do. So, we ban a lot of those things. But just because everybody...just because only a small percentage of the people exposed to violent pornography are affected in such a way that it's instrumental in them acting out some of their....aggressions that is inspired in them doesn't mean that it shouldn't be very powerfully controlled. It's like anything. I liken it to ads for Ford Thunderbirds. I mean, the Ford Motor company does not believe that everybody who sees that ad is going to buy a Ford Thunderbird. Only a tiny, tiny, tiny percentage of the people who see that ad are going to be influenced in some way. But the Ford Motor company would not spend hundreds of millions of dollars or tens of millions of dollars in advertising if they didn't think it had some effect. And they know it has an effect. Just like pornography. The kinds of ...the kinds of sadistic and violent things that are associated with ...whether in film or in literature, has an effect on some people. A small percentage. And it may not be the only thing, just as that ad for the Ford Thunderbird isn't the only thing. But it contributes to a mind set to buy that car, to act out those aggressions, you know, to beat or strangle that person to death. It's a critical variable in the formula.

RK: Did? I don't recall, but I don't think the FBI asked that question.

TB: Yes, they did. Well, not on their....the answer to the question is in there, and in their summary of findings, in that bulletin. It's mentioned in three separate places and you know they didn't highlight it and that kind of disappointed me. And I...I put...I made some footnotes to that report to send to the FBI. And one of the most prominent influences, and one of the most prominent things mentioned by all these individuals was their exposure to pornography. And it's mentioned three separate places in that report of their study of these 36 individuals, pornography came out as being the most prevalent factor that all these ...that connect them together. Not each and every one, but let's say 70/80% of them. And I've to sit down and look at the report again, but I found it very significant and I thought it'd been underplayed. And I, and in terms of, if we're looking for solutions and not just reactions to crisis, I mean, even if you're successful and you stop a guy after he kills four or five or ten people, and you

catch the guy, terrific. But it still has been a great loss. And nobody can repair that loss. And how much better it would be if we could eliminate some of the more obvious contributing factors to the development of this. Which I believe with all my heart. And maybe I'm biased and Ibut what I know with all my heart is that it's a terrifically potent force that aggravates tendencies toward violent behavior of the kind that we see in serial murderers. And that influences, in a word, pornography. But I know it's a very broad word, but the kind of stuff that you encounter not just in dirty book stores but now on cable TV. I shudder to think, you know, as a young person...I grew up in the 50s. Rather austere, Victorian era compared to today. When TV was fairly bland.

RK: They didn't have Halloween one through six.

TB: Jesus Christ.

RK: Isn't that something?

TB: And if I...in my formative years...if I'd seen that...and I can imagine young kids who, latch key children, maybe kids that come home with a snoot full of drugs and a bad attitude after being thrown out of school and their mom isn't home and they turn it on and there's Halloween or one of those, one of the many they've got...I saw one the other day. I said, "Good Lord,..." It was a movie on cable called "Stripped to Kill". It's a lovely little film about somebody who goes around killing topless dancers. And I said, "can you imagine being a fourteen year old boy with some problems, seeing this kind of stuff." I said, "God, it's just sewing those seeds." I know it is. I know it is. I can't, I've often toyed with the idea of trying to...trying to express myself to some group that deals with pornography and violence in the media and saying, "Hey, I know. Believe me. I wish I could, I mean, I wish somebody would believe me. But I can't really do it without really, you know...being...saying...hey, look.

RK: Yeah.

TB: But it's a tragedy...and I can only guess that given what I see it's going to get worse.

RK: Yeah, that's right.

TB: Cause...ahh...

RK: One of the things that I was noticing one time was the number of pornographic literature in and around the murder scenes. Not just serial murder scenes, but all of them. I mean, if you dig deep in that. I mean, you used to just overlook that stuff and not do it. But it's something else.

Guard: [interrupts] This time I don't think you can stay here.

RK: Well, we're done when you're done.

[END]

Epilogue

Sara is a pseudonym for me, and I am a surviving victim of Ted Bundy who suffered a severe trauma back in the 1970s which resulted in significant memory loss of the events of that time period. Everything connected to Ted Bundy was suppressed from memory for over thirty years only to emerge in a random and fragmented manner. It is a form of memory loss that was accompanied by a delayed onset of severe PTSD. All memories associated to Ted Bundy, from high school forward, were entirely buried in my brain. They did not emerge for decades and I had no idea they were there. When they did emerge, in a random, broken, pattern, it was terrifying as I was literally living through what happened in pieces, experiencing each piece as though it was happening for the first time and I was a girl and not a fifty-something woman.

My story, “Reconstructing Sara,” is presented in another volume. This volume is being published to refute some of which has been put out about Ted Bundy and his cases in general, especially what he had to say about the mindset of a serial killer. His analysis of the Green River killings provides insights on a broader application than what has been published about them publicly. A third volume which is the final interview with Robert Keppel is also being published.

These volumes, taken together, are meant to provide supporting background information on all that I had suffered as an unknown victim to law enforcement during that time period. I struggled for years with trauma that was lying below the surface, not readily visible to anyone, not even to me, but that trauma was impacting who I was as a person and prohibiting me from living the kind of life I would have lived if I had not been so severely impacted by all that happened to me over the span of four years. Collectively, it influenced my relationships, my career and my life.

It wasn't the fault of law enforcement that they were not aware of me and it was not my fault that I could not come forward. The trauma at the time to me was severe and it was not manifesting itself in a manner that was readily apparent to others. But what happened later on, decades later, when I tried to come forward, is troublesome to me and it deserves to be reviewed by the law enforcement community as a whole and by the public at large as it is reflective of concerns I

have related to the constitutional rights of all citizens and in particular severely traumatized victims.

Trauma was not understood and serial offenders were not well understood in the 1970s. Severe trauma that can occur from stalking and repeated rape with captivity creates physical damage in the brain and this has recently been proven by studies conducted over the past few years. I also suffered what I now know to be concussions from being unconscious during periods of time both related to his rendering me unconscious to abduct me as well as during the time I was held in captivity. Much of what I came forward with as a survivor at least as far back as 2001 had never been publicly reported. I was coming forward prior to other now famous cases of young people held in captivity and no one seemed willing to review my case against the evidence. Per the records, evidence had been sealed.

Memory is adversely impacted by trauma. Witness types of trauma to me are not always experienced the same way as victim traumas. They are different perspectives at least in my opinion. It caused me to have great difficulty in expressing what had happened to me. Often, it felt like I'd had a stroke, where I knew what I needed and wanted to say but I could not make the experience come out in a way that sounded believable. Memory fragments were vague, feelings were out of place, sights and smells were sharp, but there was no beginning and no end point. At other times the memory fragments were sharp and defined so much so that I could see the pavement or actually smell the smells as if living through them for the first time – which in some ways was true as I had no memory of events until they surfaced decades later. I suffered both types of trauma [witness and victim] and my memories seem to be reflective of that.

Ted Bundy was a serial killer and a serial rapist who was sadistic in his actions. He was not a traumatized man. He may have played on that perception because he thought it would somehow lessen his responsibility for his own actions; but he was not a traumatized man. The case files support that statement. I do not understand why the theory was initially perpetuated that Ted Bundy was traumatized – there is actually nothing in the witness statements or psychiatric interviews that were provided to me that would suggest such a thing: primarily it is the opposite.

The only reason I survived captivity was that he somehow had some purpose for me alive, at least in the short term, but that was short-lived as the time came for him to move to Utah. Based on what Ted is saying in these transcripts, if he

indeed was trying to express what he felt truthfully, serial offenders are driven by many factors. Trauma is not a sole contributing factor to the development of serial killer pathology, if in fact it is a factor at all. If we believe what he is saying, the drive to kill someone to possess them in death is an “aspect of overall behavior”. An aspect Ted claimed could be influenced by the visual influences of pornography.

It is time for the cases of Ted Bundy to be reevaluated in the context of what we know today about trauma and its impact on victims - on memory processing and on the traits and pathology of serial offenders. I survived a serial killer and there may be others who have survived as well whose stories were not believed by law enforcement. Serial cases need to be thoroughly reviewed once an offender is caught for all components of the case by “new eyes” and all information from multiple jurisdictions included as well, if such information is pertinent to the killer’s known tendencies. The public cannot help law enforcement if they are not aware of some of these traits. The public cannot protect themselves if they believe that serial offenders are only driven by trauma or that such offenders have consistent behavior patterns.

It is hoped that this volume and its companion book, “Reconstructing Sara,” as well as the final interview, “A Defense of Denial”, help to expand the knowledge base of what is known of that time period because much of this information has never been publicly shared. It is my hope that what I lived through and what I have chosen to share in these volumes can help another victim who may have suffered the same kind of brain injury from trauma that I did.

-Sara: A Survivor

TED BUNDY KILLED MANY WOMEN, BUT AT LEAST ONE OF HIS VICTIMS HELD IN CAPTIVITY SURVIVED....

This is the true story of what happened to me in the 1970s. I knew Ted Bundy from the time I was 16 until the age of 21 when I dropped out of college, suffering from stress-induced amnesia created by feeling trapped, with nowhere to hide, and in a constant state of shock and terror. My injuries lay below the surface, rarely visible to those who knew me, as they did not know what to look for at the time. Rape trauma, stalking trauma, and signs and symptoms of traumatic brain injury were not well known at that time. It wasn't until I entered my fifties that the secrets of my mind, broken and shattered, began to emerge - a process that would take nearly 15 years.

This is my story - told as "Sara", a pseudonym. It is often written in the fractured and fragmented manner in which many of the memories returned and in which some still remain to this day. It is supported in large part by documents associated to the case which were never released publicly until now. It is my sincerest hope that what I have to say in this book helps other victims who may be severely traumatized and who may suffer brain damage, both physical and from severe stress, which impacts their ability to process and remember events for a period of time afterwards. My case is rare in that it took decades for my mind to release the fragments of memories that remained, but it nevertheless happened. Stalking trauma, rape trauma, PTSD and head injury associated to violent sexual assaults can impact not only the victim, but it can become generational if not recognized and interventions are not done. This is what happened to me and I hope what I reveal in this book can help prevent it from happening to others.

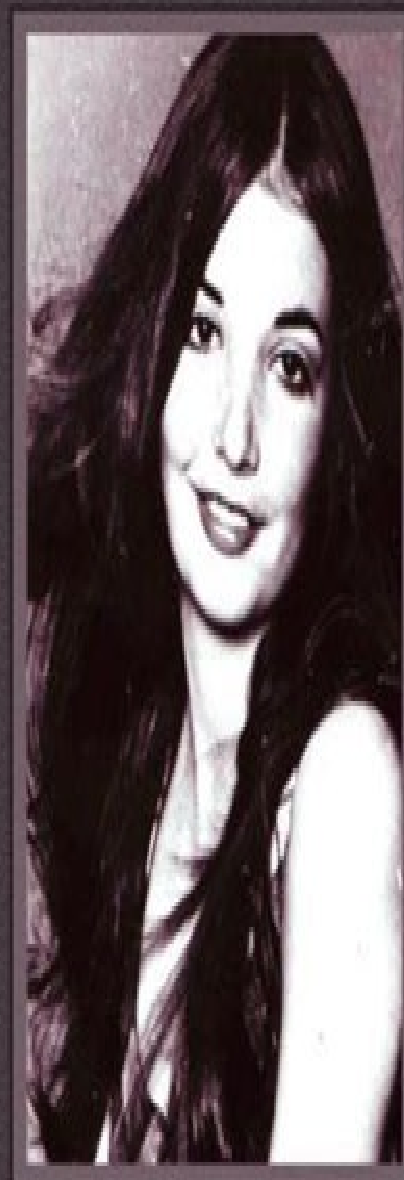


RECONSTRUCTING SARA

SARA: A SURVIVOR

RECONSTRUCTING SARA

THE LOST VICTIM OF TED BUNDY



SARA: A SURVIVOR

Reconstructing Sara: The Lost Victim of Ted Bundy

Is the true story of what happened to me back in the 1970s. I survived multiple captures by Ted but not without injury. My story is supported by documents never publicly released. My memory fragments, date and time stamped for over a decade, contained elements of the case that were factual and which I could not have known as they had been withheld from the public.

It was only by receiving the files in November of 2014 and June of 2015 that I was able to prove the truth of those memories and finally be able to testify about all that had been done to me.

This book is also available through

Grass Butterfly Books.

Copyright 2015.